Mapping Linguistic Data

Essays in honour of Liliane Haegeman

Metin Bağrıaçık, Anne Breitbarth, and Karen De Clercq (eds.)

Cover image: The White Cat (F. Marc)

Foreword

Liliane Haegeman's oeuvre is characterised by the aim to advance syntactic theory based on strongly empirically informed research. A special interest of hers is the syntax and morphology of dialects, in particular (West) Flemish. At the same time, Liliane has worked together with an immense number of linguists on phenomena in an even larger number of languages. Her knack for puzzling data and rigid formal analysis have influenced the direction of research for many years. She has shaped (and continues to shape!) the field by her seminal work on verbal syntax, negation, adverbial clauses and main clause phenomena, and many generations of students have grown up on a healthy diet of several editions of the *Introduction to Government & Binding Theory* and, subsequently, *Thinking Syntactically*.

With this WebFestschrift, that contains linguistic and non-linguistic contributions, we want to thank Liliane for what she did for us and means to us as her students, colleagues and linguistic friends. We also want to wish her a very happy 65th birthday and a good retirement. Of course, we hope that Liliane will remain active in the field and that she will keep mapping linguistic data and astonish us all.

All the best to you, Liliane, and a very happy birthday!

Metin Bağrıaçık
Anne Breitbarth
Karen De Clercq

Table of contents

6

7

Possessors, foci and topics in the Greek DP

Artemis Alexiadou & Melita Stavrou

1   Introduction

The position(s) and the status of the DP initial possessive genitive in Greek have been extensively discussed in the literature since the mid/late eighties. Although not the principal focus of investigation in Horrocks & Stavrou's work (1987), the nature of possessive genitive constituted their main argument for the existence of a functional category above NP, namely DP, in Greek.

In this squib, dedicated with love and respect to Liliane and her extensive work on possessors in West Flemish (and cross-linguistically), we return to the issue of the position and function of the possessive genitive and look with more detail at the preposed genitive and its possible interpretations.

The squib is structured as follows. First, we briefly summarize the basic facts and argumentation of Horrocks & Stavrou (1987). The main points of this outline concern the parallelisms between D and I/C in the sentential domain and the focus interpretation that both possessors and interrogative words get when moved to the specifier position of their respective functional categories. We also relate the focus interpretation with the (im)possibility of the genitive being doubled by a pronominal clitic inside the DP. Building on an idea first encountered in Giusti & Stavrou (2008), we show that the prenominal (or preposed) possessor in Greek can only be stressed as focus and cases of apparent violation of that generalization which have been brought up over the years (see Giusti & Stavrou 2008) are instances of either topicalization or of dislocation (as Hanging Topic) of the whole DP that contains the possessor. Closing our squib, we summarize the functions and interpretations of the preposed genitive in Greek.

2 Horrocks and Stavrou (1987)

The point of departure of Horrocks & Stavrou were nominal phrases where the possessor, in the form of a full DP whose lexical head (as well as other possible material) bears morphological genitive case, is found in a position preceding the article:

(1)   a.   tu   fititi   to   vivlio
           the.GEN.SG student.GEN SG the book
           'the student's book'
     b.   ton   pedjion   to   domatio
           the.GEN. PL kids.GEN. PL the room
           'the kids' room'

The position of the genitive in (1) is marked, since the intonation and interpretation it gets is that of a (contrastive) focus, in contrast to the neutral interpretation it gets in its 'base' position, following the noun. The focus function of the preposed genitive automatically means that the possessor cannot be doubled by a clitic:[1]

(2)   a.   *Tu   fititi   to   vivlio tu   katastrafike.
            the.GEN.SG student.GEN.SG the book CL.3SG.GEN was destroyed
            'The student's book was destroyed.'
     b.   *ton   pedjion   to   domatio tus
            the.GEN.PL kids.GEN.PL the room   CL.3PL.GEN

Horrocks & Stavrou (1987) put special emphasis on the fact that the same distributional pattern as in (1) is observed in interrogative DPs, in which the interrogative genitive also precedes the (definite) article (for more data and detailed discussion see Horrocks & Stavrou 1987):

(3)   tinos   to   aftokinito?
       whose the car   (from: *to aftokinito tinos*? 'the car whose')
       'Whose car?'

There is a further eloquent parallelism between interrogative clauses and inter-

---

[1] It must be noted that clitic doubling (of the possessor) is not attested inside the DP irrespectively of the position of the possessive genitive (Alexiadou & Stavrou 2000, Giusti & Stavrou 2008). The fact that it is predictably disallowed with focused genitives is independent and explained on the basis of the focus character of the genitive.

rogative DPs:

(4)   Ti   ekane?
        what did.3SG
        'What did he do?'

(4) is exactly parallel to (3), the former showing fronting of the interrogative pro-
noun in the sentence, the second in the nominal expression. This parallelism
led Horrocks & Stavrou to assume that within the nominal phrase there must
be a grammatical position for the interrogative possessive pronoun to land to
(internal *wh*-movement) parallel to CP in clauses, where *wh*-constituents move
to. Such a position, a specifier position by analogy to Spec,CP, must be in front
of the article, given the word order in (3). In that case, the article is the head
of the projection at the specifier of which constituents from a position lower in
the nominal phrase move to. Horrocks & Stavrou (1987) named that projection
Art(icle)P. It was the same projection that was labelled DP in Abney (1987). The
crucial fact underlined by Horrocks & Stavrou was that the pre-article position
is an A′-position, similar to the Spec, CP. Thus, in Greek, in contrast to English,
the same relationship holds between DP and NP as between CP and VP. In both
cases, the specifier position of the functional layer is an A′-position and may
host constituents moved from within the lexical category they dominate (op-
erator movement); in English, DP is parallel to IP. The status of Spec,DP as an
A′-position is used in Alexiadou (2016) to explain the unavailability of posses-
sor doubling with full DPs in Greek. Giusti & Stavrou (2008) note that in certain
cases involving pronominal possessors, the possessor can be clitic-doubled (see
(5)). This is impossible when the possessor is a full DP (6):

(5)   To vivlio <u>mu</u>   <u>emena</u>   den pulithike katholu.
        the book CL.1SG me.GEN.STR not sold   at all
        'My book was not sold at all.'

(6)   Petaxa   to vivlio-(*tu) tu   fititi.
        threw.1SG the book-(*his) the student.GEN
        'I threw away the student's book.'

German and other Germanic languages have possessor doubling with full DPs,
as shown in (7):

(7)   dem Vater   seine Katz
        the father.DAT his   cat

According to Alexiadou (2016), Greek differs from German(ic), which has possessor doubling (7), in that in Greek, the pre-determiner possessor occupies an A′-position, as argued by Horrocks & Stavrou (1987). By contrast, in German(ic), the prenominal possessor can be argued to occupy an argument position, as it receives no particular focal or contrastive stress, see Corver (1990), Haegeman (2004), and Georgi & Salzmann (2011) among others. The latter type of possessor can be doubled by a clitic, which Alexiadou assumes, following Corver, that occupies D°. This is not possible in Greek. In Greek, the possessive clitic is enclitic to the head noun and never realizes D°. Evidence for this comes from the observation that in German(ic) possessor doubling constructions, the pronoun inflects like a determiner and not like an adjective, the possessive pronoun determines the inflection of a following adjective, and the possessive pronoun is in complementary distribution with other determiners.

3   Possessors, foci, topics and the DP

However, Giusti & Stavrou (2008) make the following observation, which appears to weaken the generalization that the preposed possessor in Greek is always (contrastively) focused. There are instances of DP initial genitives that are not focalized but look like (contrastive) topics (although such instances are much rarer than the cases where the preposed genitive is focused):

(8)   Tis Marias o petheros epathe egefaliko.
        the.GEN SG Maria.GEN.SG the father-in-law underwent stroke
        'Mary's father-in-law underwent a stroke.'

In (8) the preposed genitive is not focalized and does not get emphatic/contrastive stress. The reading of (8) is something like 'talking of Mary/As for Mary her...'. Let us further consider the following context.

Context: Several of my former classmates face with health and other problems in their families; in particular:

(8)   Tis Marias o petheros...
(9)   Tis   Elenis   o   jos epathe atihima sti   thalassa.
        the.GEN.SG Helen.GEN.SG the son had   accident in the sea
        'Helen's son had an accident in the sea.'

11

(10) Tu   Kosta   o aderfos horise   prin   dio mines.
      the.GEN.SG Kosta.GEN.SG the brother divorced before two months
      'Kosta's brother got divorced two months ago.'

In these cases, the preposed possessor is not the focus but has rather the flavor of a topic, probably a contrastive topic. Nonetheless, the clitic is not allowed in such cases either:

(11) *Tis   Elenis   o jos tis   epathe atihima sti
      the.GEN.SG Helen.GEN.SG the son CL.GEN.SG had   accident in the
      thalassa.
      sea

Giusti & Stavrou (2008) hypothesize that rather than saying that the genitive stands for a topic inside the DP, it is the entire DP that has this function, not just the possessor. The topic character of the whole DP in cases such as (8)–(10) is supported by the fact that it can be clitic doubled just like any other topicalized object in Greek:

(12) Tis   Marias   ton pethero   ton   skotosan i
      the.GEN.SG Maria.GEN.SG the father-in-law CL.ACC.SG killed   the
      jermani ston polemo.
      Germans in the war
      'Maria's father-in-law was killed by the Germans during the war.'

In isolation, the possessor may only be focused – the across-the-board case as said above. If this line of thought is along the right track, it means that the preposed genitive in (8) was originally focused within the DP, but when the DP moved to a topic position in the clause, the focus status of *tis Marias* was cancelled or overriden by the topic status of the whole DP. Full assessment of non-focused (preposed) genitives as in (8)–(10) requires a detailed examination of the interaction of foci and topics in the clause and in the DP.

   Let us next consider cases similar to those in (8)–(10) but with a clear pause after the preposed genitive:

(13) Tis   Marias,   i aderfi *(tis)   exi megalo provlima
      the.GEN.SG Maria.GEN.SG the sister   CL.GEN.SG has big   problem
      me   ton antra   tis.
      with the husband hers

'Mary's sister has a big problem with her husband.' (Lit. 'Let's talk of Mary – she has…).'

In (13) the clitic inside the clause is required, in contrast with the previous case. Giusti & Stavrou assume that the possessor occupies a topic position in the sentence, not within the DP. If we take into consideration Anagnostopoulou's (1997) distinction between Clitic Left Dislocation and Hanging Topic, the question is whether in (13) the extraposed genitive DP is an instance of a hanging topic or (left) dislocation. As commented by Giusti & Stavrou (2008), both dislocation and HT represent exclusively oral (and often casual) speech, hence it is difficult to obtain clear judgments from the speakers. Nonetheless, here we follow Giusti & Stavrou (2008: 419–421) and assume that (13) instantiates a case of dislocation. There are two reasons for this: first, the preposed genitive may not carry default nominative, something that is usual with nominal hanging topics; second, the genitive may not be co-indexed with an epithet or a demonstrative lower in the clause, something, again, typical of hanging topics. In (13) the genitive is adjoined (to the left, but it can also be adjoined to the right) to the IP (or CP) and from there it forms a chain with the clitic – an operator – that appears within the clause. The two share the same phi-features and (genitive) case.

In the light of the above discussion, we conclude that the possessive DP that is found before the definite article in the Greek DP is a focused constituent which has moved to Spec, DP attracted by the [+foc] feature on D. This movement parallels the movement of *wh*-constituents in the clause. Apparent violations of this generalization are instances of either topicalization of the whole DP that contains the preposed possessor to a sentential topic position, or of dislocation of the possessor as Hanging Topic (along the lines of Anagnostopoulou 1997) to IP or CP.

4 Conclusions

In Greek, Spec, DP is A'-position. It can host both foci, but not topics, coming from a lower position in the DP. In that case it bears a [+foc] feature. In the absence of such a feature, the possessor stays in its original merge position. When the preposed genitive DP is not focused, then two things can happen: either it is the entire DP that has moved to a sentential topic position, most likely as a contrastive topic, (if it is an object of a verb it can be clitic doubled) after the possessor was moved to the spec, DP inside the DP. Alternatively, the possessor is

dislocated and adjoined to the IP (or the CP) with a clear pause separating it from the rest of the clause (doubling is then mandatory).

References

Abney, S.P. 1987. *The English noun phrase in its sentential aspect*. Cambridge, MA: MIT dissertation.

Alexiadou, A. 2016. Dp internal (clitic) doubling. In *Proceedings of the vii nereus international workshop: Clitic doubling and other issues of the syntax/semantic interface in romance dps, arbeitspapier 128*. 1–10.

Alexiadou, A. & Stavrou, M. 2000. Adjective clitic combinations in the Greek DP. In B. Gerlach & J. Grijzenhout (eds.), *Clitics in phonology, morphology and syntax*. 63–84. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Anagnostopoulou, E. 1997. Clitic left dislocation and contrastive left dislocation. In E. Anagnostopoulou, H. van Riemsdijk & F. Zwarts (eds.), *Materials on left dislocation*. 151–192. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Corver, N. 1990. *The syntax of left branch extraction*: University of Tilburg dissertation.

Georgi, D. & Salzmann, M. 2011. DP-internal double agreement is not double agree: Consequences of agree-based case assignment within DP. *Lingua* 121. 2069–2088.

Giusti, G. & Stavrou, M. 2008. Possessive clitics in the DP: Doubling or dislocation? In D. Kallulli & L. Tasmowski (eds.), *Clitic doubling in the Balkan languages*. 389–433. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Haegeman, L. 2004. DP-periphery and clausal periphery: Possessor doubling in West Flemish. In D. Adger, C. de Cat & G. Tsoulas (eds.), *Peripheries: Syntactic edges and their effects*. 211–240. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Horrocks, G. & Stavrou, M. 1987. Bounding theory and Greek syntax: Evidence for Wh-movement in NP. *Journal of Linguistics* 23. 79–123.

A negative concord puzzle
tied to French exceptives

J.-Marc Authier

1   Introduction

Elaborating on ideas put forth in Baciu (1978), a number of researchers such as O'Neill (2011), Homer (2015) and Authier (2018) have converged on the idea that French *(ne) … que* exceptives like (1) are hidden quantificational comparatives that contain phonologically unrealized material. This material (capitalized in (1)) consists of a silent n-word *rien* 'nothing' and, as argued in Authier (2018), a silent *de plus* 'more'.

(1)   Elle (n')   aime RIEN   DE PLUS que les perles.
        she NEG likes nothing of more than the pearls
        'She only likes pearls.'

The evidence in favor of assuming the presence of the silent n-word *RIEN* 'nothing' is quite robust. Besides the fact that is can appear overtly in many varieties of French, including colloquial standard French, Homer (2015) observes that when an exceptive and an n-word are clause-mates, as in (2), they give rise to either a negative concord (NC) reading or a double negation (DN) reading.[1] This suggests that *(ne)…que* exceptives do indeed contain a covert n-word.[2]

---

[1] As has been noted (cf. Corblin (1996: 251), stress on the first (or the second) n-word seems necessary to bring out the double-negative reading.

[2] Additional evidence comes from the fact that an exceptive adverb like seulement 'only', not being an n-word, does not trigger negative concord readings. Thus, (i) contrasts with (2) in that only (2) allows NC.

(i)   Personne ne porte seulement du bleu.
        DN reading only: Everybody wears something besides blue.

(2)   Personne (ne) porte que du bleu.
        NC reading: Nobody wears anything but blue.
        DN reading: Everybody wears something besides blue.

As for the silent DE PLUS component, it too can appear overtly as long as overt rien is used as well. This is illustrated in (3a)-(3b).

(3)   a.   On (n')   a   vu   **rien**   **de plus**   que quelques phoques.
                we NEG have seen nothing of more than a-few   seals
                'We only saw a few seals.'
        b.   *On (n') a vu **RIEN de plus** que quelques phoques.

Thus, a reasonable hypothesis seems to be that (4a) is the maximal phonological realization of a quantificational comparative which can also be spelled out as the partial realization in (4b) and the minimal realization in (4c). That is, (4a)-(4c) are syntactically and semantically equivalent and differ only in terms of those features that are accessed by the phonological component.

(4)   a.   Je (n')   ai   acheté rien   de plus   que   des   tomates.
                I   NEG have bought nothing of more than some tomatoes
                'I only bought tomatoes.'
        b.   Je (n')ai acheté rien DE PLUS que des tomates.
        c.   Je (n')ai acheté RIEN DE PLUS que des tomates.

This hypothesis immediately raises the question of whether the silent elements represented in capital letters in (4b) and (4c) come to be silent in the same way as lexical elements whose phonetic matrix is deleted at Spell-Out, instantiating the phenomenon known as ellipsis (see e.g. Merchant 2001, 2004. To answer this question, let us take as a point of departure the feature-based taxonomy of lexical items given in Her & Tsai (2015). This taxonomy assumes that canonical lexical items have formal features (FF), which are accessible in the course of the narrow-syntactic derivation, as well as phonological features (PFF) and semantic features (LFF). While all lexical items active in syntax must have FF, non-canonical lexical items may lack PFF, LFF, or both. For example, overt expletives have no LFF, base-generated silent elements like PRO and pro have no PFF and null expletives have neither PFF nor LFF. Further, lexical items with no PFF, which we will simply call silent elements (SEs), differ from elements whose silence is due to ellipsis in that while the former have no PFF to begin with, the latter enter the derivation with PFF (i.e. enter the derivation as canonical lex-

ical items) but their PFF are made invisible by ellipsis at the syntax-phonology interface (so-called PF deletion). A second important difference between SEs and elided elements has to do with the way in which they are subject to recoverability. That is, the meaning of SEs is recoverable from their pronounced counterparts, which means that SE do not require overt antecedents. PF-deleted elements, on the other hand, are recoverable through overt discourse antecedents. Given this taxonomy, the silent components in (4a)-(4c) must be seen as SEs rather than elided elements given that they are interpreted not via a discourse antecedent but, rather, by accessing the meaning of their PFF-endowed counterparts in the lexicon. Keeping these characteristics in mind, I will devote the remainder of this squib to the issue of availability of partial and minimal exceptive ne...que realizations under prepositions. As I will show, while their syntactic derivation is consistent with the hypotheses formulated above, their semantic behavior as regards the availability of negative concord constitutes an unexpected puzzle which I will carefully lay out but for which I will offer but speculative remarks.

2   Deriving prepositional exceptives

Based on paradigms like (5), it has been widely assumed in the literature (see e.g. Gross 1977: 90) that exceptive que can never follow a preposition.

(5)   Je (ne) compte **que sur/*sur que** son intégrité.
        I   NEG count   than on/*on   than his integrity
        'I count only on his integrity.'

However, some have noted (e.g. Damourette & Pichon 1943: 220 and Gaatone 1999: 105) that this characterization does not always hold in colloquial registers, as (6) illustrates.

(6)   a.   Faites trois séances si vous voulez, moi je ne   viendrai **à que**
              do   three sessions if you   wish   me I   NEG will-come to than
              deux.
              two
              'Organize three sessions if you wish; me, I'll come to only two of them.'
              (M. ABA, July 2, 1919, recorded in Damourette & Pichon 1943: 220)

b. [...] des ministres **avec que** des vraies factures [...]
    some ministers with than some genuine bills
'[...] ministers with only genuine bills'
(TF1, May 13, 1991, recorded in Gaatone 1999: 105)

On closer inspection, the full prepositional exceptive paradigm turns out to be comprised of three distinct cases. First, there are instances, illustrated in (7), in which the que in minimal realizations not only may but must follow the preposition regardless of register. These typically involve PPs complement to N and do not allow (optional) *ne*.

(7) a. Ils ont un menu **avec que** des produits bio.
    they have a menu with than some products organic
    'They have a menu with only organic products.'
    b. *Ils ont un menu **qu'avec** des produits bio.

Under the view adopted here, the maximal realization for a sentence like (7a) is as in (8).

(8) Ils ont un menu **avec rien de plus que** des produits bio.

The minimal realization and the partial realization of (8) are then obtained by using the silent counterparts to the overt elements in bold, yielding (9a)-(9b). Further, given the source in (8), there is no way to derive the ungrammatical (9c), in which que precedes the preposition.

(9) a. Ils ont un menu avec RIEN DE PLUS que des produits bio.
    b. Ils ont un menu avec rien DE PLUS que des produits bio.
    c. *Ils ont un menu qu'avec des produits bio.

Next, there are maximal realizations, such as the one in (10), in which the preposition introducing the phrase that is the object of the comparison must be repeated.

(10) Ils (ne) causent de rien **de** plus que ***(de)** politique. they NEG talk of nothing of more than *(of) politics 'They only talk about politics.'

Both the partial and minimal realizations of such sentences involve the overt realization of at least one of the two instances of the preposition. The first instance of the preposition can only be overt if rien is overt. Further, if only one instance of the preposition is overt, it must be the second one. This correctly rules in (11a)-

(11c), and rules out (11d)-(11f).

(11) a.   Ils (ne) causent ~~de~~ rien DE PLUS que de politique.
      b.   Ils (ne) causent ~~de~~ RIEN DE PLUS que de politique.
      c.   Ils (ne) causent de rien DE PLUS que de politique.
      d.   *Ils (ne) causent de RIEN DE PLUS que de politique.
      e.   *Ils (ne) causent de rien DE PLUS que de politique.
      f.   *Ils (ne) causent de RIEN DE PLUS que ~~de~~ politique.

We are, however, left with the following questions, for which I have no answers at this time: (a) why is the overtness/presence of the first instance of the preposition contingent upon *rien* being overt; (b) why must it be the second instance of the preposition that is overt when only one instance of the preposition is overt / present; (c) is the first instance of the preposition, crossed out in the representations in (11a)-(11b), simply omitted or is it syntactically present but phonologically silent and why?

The third and final set of facts consists of maximal realizations like (12a)-(12b), which feature one or two instances of the preposition being used.

(12) a.   Je (n') ai   cuisiné **avec** rien   de plus qu'**avec**   des
           I   NEG have cooked with nothing of more than-with some
           produits   frais.
           ingredients fresh
           'I cooked with only fresh ingredients.'
      b.   Je (n')ai cuisiné **avec** rien de plus que des produits frais.

We thus have two possible sources for partial and minimal realizations. Stemming from the source in (12a), which contains only one instance of the preposition, are the partial and minimal realizations in (13), both of which are attested.

(13) a.   Je (n')ai cuisiné avec rien DE PLUS que des produits frais.
      b.   Je (n')ai cuisiné avec RIEN DE PLUS que des produits frais.

The source in (12b), which contains two instances of the preposition, additionally allows us to generate the partial and minimal realizations in (14a)-(14d), which are attested as well. Note, however, that, based on the data in (14), one must again assume, as we did for (11), that the first instance of the preposition can only be overt if *rien* is overt, i.e., not a SE (or a trace – cf. (14d) which differs from the partial realization in (14b) only in that *rien* appears in pre-participial position, a case of so-called quantification at a distance). Further, if only one instance of

the preposition is overt, it must be the second one.

(14)   a. ??Je (n')ai cuisiné avec rien DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
     b. Je (n')ai cuisiné ~~avec~~ rien DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
     c. Je (n')ai cuisiné ~~avec~~ RIEN DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
     d. Je (n')ai rien$_i$ cuisiné ~~avec~~ t$_i$ DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
     e. *Je (n')ai cuisiné avec RIEN DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.

In sum, despite some needed stipulations concerning which instances of the preposition may or may not be overt, our general assumptions concerning the nature of the full realization of both partial and minimal realizations allow us to generate all of the attested syntactic realizations of these constructions. In what follows, however, I will show that things are not as straightforward at the syntax-semantics interface. Specifically, I will demonstrate that some partial and minimal realizations unexpectedly exhibit a behavior that diverge from that of their full realizations when it comes to the availability of negative concord readings.

3   A negative concord puzzle

As is well-known, in French, when two n-words are clause-mates (cf. Déprez 1999 among many others), they may (but need not) give rise to a NC reading. Thus, a sentence like (15a), which contains the two n-words *jamais* 'never' and *personne* 'nobody', is ambiguous between a NC (single negation) reading (15b) and a DN (double negation) reading (15c).

(15)   a.   Il n'y a **jamais personne** sur cette plage.
          there is never   nobody   on this   beach
     b.   There never is anybody on this beach.   (NC interpretation)
     c.   There is always somebody on this beach.   (DN interpretation)

The fact that the two maximal realizations in (16a)-(16b), which contain the two n-words *jamais* 'never' and *rien* 'nothing', are reported by a majority of speakers to be similarly ambiguous between (16c) and (16d) immediately suggests that the two n-words are clause-mates.

(16)   a.   Je (n') ai   jamais cuisiné **avec** rien   de plus qu'**avec** des
          I   NEG have never cooked with nothing of more than-with some
          produits   frais.
          ingredients fresh

b. Je (n')ai jamais cuisiné **avec** rien de plus que des produits frais.
c. I've never cooked with anything more than fresh ingredients.   (NC reading)
d. I've always cooked with something more than fresh ingredients. (DN reading)

This being the case, we then expect that adding the n-word *jamais* to the five partial and minimal realizations in (13) and (14), as in (17) and (18), should yield a similar ambiguity between a NC and a DN reading. This follows from our assumptions that (a) partial and minimal realizations are syntactically indistinguishable from their maximal realization sources and (b) the SEs they contain are semantically recoverable by accessing the meaning of their PFF-endowed counterparts found in their maximal realizations. This prediction, however, turns out to be incorrect. Although there is some variation in native speakers' judgments, the great majority of my informants agreed on the following interpretations.

(17)   a.   Je (n')ai jamais cuisiné avec rien DE PLUS que des produits frais.
            Unambiguous: DN reading only
       b.   Je (n')ai jamais cuisiné avec RIEN DE PLUS que des produits frais.
            Unambiguous: DN reading only

(18)   a.   Je (n')ai jamais cuisiné ~~avec~~ rien DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
            Ambiguous: NC and DN readings possible (DN reading preferred)
       b.   Je (n')ai jamais cuisiné ~~avec~~ RIEN DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
            Ambiguous: NC and DN readings possible (NC reading preferred)
       c.   Je (n')ai jamais rien$_i$ cuisiné ~~avec~~ t$_i$ DE PLUS qu'avec des produits frais.
            Ambiguous: NC and DN readings possible (NC reading preferred)

While the interpretations tied to the partial and minimal realizations in (18) linked to the maximal realization source in (16a) do conform to our predictions, those in (17), which stem from the maximal realization in (16b) do not. Specifically, while (16b) allows NC, its purported partial (17a) and minimal (12b) realizations do not. Descriptively, the presence of one or more SEs preceded by an overt instance of the preposition somehow blocks NC. Explaining why this is so is not immediately obvious. It seems clear, however, that what contributes to the unavailability of NC in (17) is the combination of two factors; namely the use of SEs and the fact that the quantificational comparative is c-commanded by a phonologically overt preposition.

Regarding the first factor, one could conjecture that in particular syntactic configurations, the use of phonologically unrealized material blocks NC readings. This is not an implausible assumption, given that a case can be made for ellipsis having such a blocking effect on NC. To explain, Merchant (2004) has argued, based on a range of connectivity effects, that fragment answers are derived from full sentential structures, subject to ellipsis. If this is correct, then (19) should be assumed to have the representation in (19), where the crossed-out material represents syntactically present material that has undergone PF-deletion.

(19) A: Qui n'a jamais pleuré?   'Who's never cried?'
      B: Personne.   'Nobody.'
      C: Personne n'a jamais pleuré.
      D: Personne n'a jamais pleuré.

As pointed out in Corblin (1996: 251), while a non-elliptical answer like (19) is ambiguous between a NC and a DN reading, its corresponding fragment/elliptical answer in (19)/(19) cannot have a NC reading but must be interpreted in a binegative fashion (i.e., as meaning "Everybody has cried."). Thus, fragment answer ellipsis is one environment in which the presence of phonologically silent material negatively affects the availability of NC.

In the case under consideration in (17), however, saying that the presence of SEs blocks NC is insufficient since failure to license NC only occurs if the SE in question is c-commanded by an overt preposition (or, more simply, a preposition, if we assume that the crossed-out prepositions in cuisine6 are not syntactically represented). This has the flavor of a locality condition but, unfortunately, locality conditions on NC are poorly understood and have yet to be spelled out beyond the widespread observation that NC appears to be clause bound. Indeed, while it seems accurate to assume that French n-words that are not clause-mates fail to yield NC readings, it can be shown that n-words that are clause-mates do not always participate in NC. For example, n-words complement to the preposition *pour* 'for' participate in NC with other clause-mate n-words when pour is taken to mean 'in favor of' (20a) or introduces the stimulus of a psych predicate (20b), but do not participate in NC when pour expresses a reason (20c).

(20) a. Personne ne s'est prononcé pour rien.   (ambiguous)
          Nobody claimed to be in favor of anything.   (NC)
          Everyobody claimed to be in favor of something.   (DN)
      b. Personne ne s'est inquiété pour rien.   (ambiguous)

Nobody worried about anything. (NC)
Everybody worried about something. (DN)
  c. Personne n'a été puni pour rien. (unambiguous)
    Nobody got punished for anything. (NC)
    Everybody got punished for something. (DN)

These facts, which, to the best of my knowledge, have never been discussed in the literature, would force proponents of the clause-bound characterization of the locality conditions on NC to attribute a clausal structure to the complement of pour in (20c), but not in (20a)-(20b), a dubious move at best. A possibly more straightforward interpretation of (20) is that the set of interpretative options normally available to an n-word complement to a preposition can be reduced by the sort of thematic role that preposition assigns to it.

The thematic properties of prepositions have also been shown by Authier (2016) to play a role in the licensing of the SE pro in the context of orphan prepositions. For example, as shown in (21), the preposition *dedans* 'in' can license a pro with definite interpretation if it takes a complement that denotes a material entity with well-defined boundaries (e.g., a package – cf. (21a)) but not if it takes a complement that denotes a spatial entity with ill-defined or unknown boundaries (e.g., the streets of Montmartre – cf. (21b)).

(21) a. Ce colis,   il   y a un   cadeau dedans *pro*.
         this package there is a present in   (it)
      b. *Les rues   de Montmartre, elle vend des   crèpes dedans *pro*.
         the streets of Montmartre she sells crepes in   (them)

Returning to the interpretive contrast between the full realization of the prepositional exceptive in (16b) and its partial and minimal realizations in (17), we can now reinterpret the facts in a similar light. That is, while the preposition *avec* 'with' licenses both the overt and SE versions of the exceptive, the latter are more restricted in their interpretation or, to put it slightly differently, although SEs are recoverable from their pronounced counterparts, they display a more restricted set of interpretations when they are complement to a preposition. This is, of course, rather speculative, but it does suggest that there might be a link between the semantic properties of SEs and the selectional restrictions of the prepositions that license them. I will leave this as an open question for future research.

References

Authier, J.M. 2016. French orphan prepositions revisited. *Probus* 28. 231–270.

Authier, J.M. 2018. French *(ne) …que* exceptives at the syntax-semantics interface. Ms., The Pennsylvania State University.

Baciu, I. 1978. La négation restrictive. *Le Français Moderne* 46. 135–142.

Corblin, F. 1996. Multiple negation processing in natural language. *Theoria* 62. 214–259.

Damourette, J. & Pichon, E. 1943. *Des mots à la pensée. Essai de grammaire de la langue française [1911-1940] tome sixième*. Paris: d'Artrey.

Déprez, V. 1999. The roots of negative concord in french and french based creoles. In M. DeGraff (ed.), *Language creation and language change: Creolization, diachrony and development*. 375–428. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Gaatone, D. 1999. Réflexions sur la syntaxe de *ne … que*. In M. Plénat, M. Aurnague & A. Condamines (eds.), *L'emprise du sens. Structures linguistiques et interprétations. mélanges de syntaxe et de sémantique offerts à andrée borillo par un groupe d'amis, de collègues et de disciples*. 101–115. Amsterdam: Rodopi.

Gross, M. 1977. *Grammaire transformationnelle du français. Syntaxe du nom*. Paris: Larousse.

Her, O.S. & Tsai, H.C. 2015. On silent elements: A case study of *Grand* and its silent entourage. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 33. 575–605.

Homer, V. 2015. *Ne …que* and its challenges. In U. Steindl, T. Borer, H. Fang, A.G. Pardo, P. Guekguezian, B. Hsu, C. O'Hara & I.C. Ouyang (eds.), *Proceedings of the 32nd West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics (WCCFL 32)*. 111–120. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla.

Merchant, J. 2001. *The syntax of silence: Sluicing, islands and the theory of ellipsis*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Merchant, J. 2004. Fragments and ellipsis. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 27. 661–738.

O'Neill, T. 2011. The syntax of *ne … que* exceptives in French. *University of Pennsylvania Working Papers in Linguistics* 17. 175–184.

Subject relative clauses without a complementizer in a Modern Greek dialect

Metin Bağrıaçık

This short note is written in gratitude for Liliane Haegeman's immense contributions to syntactic theory and to the life of many young scholars, including me, in so many ways. I hope that these few pages are worthy of her and of her insights into the nature of many phenomena—among them subject contact relatives.[1]

1   Introduction

Restrictive subject and object relative clauses (hereafter RCs) in Pharasiot Greek (hereafter PhG) are finite clauses that are, in the unmarked case, introduced by the complementizer *tu* 'that'.[2] The head, external to the RC, can linearly precede (1a) and follow (1b) the RC (Bağrıaçık & Danckaert 2018).

(1)   a.   Ídha   [an gorítsi [tu   kathéti ačí   monaxó ts]].
              saw.SG a   girl   that sit.3SG there on-her-own
       b.   Ídha   [[tu   kathéti ačí   monaxó ts] an gorítsi].
              saw.SG   that sit.3SG there on-her-own a   girl
              'I saw a girl (who/that) was sitting there on her own.'

Andriotis (1948: 51) and Anastasiadis (1976: 248) claim that there exists a third, marked, option for forming restrictive relative clauses in PhG: "[RCs] in Pharasiot Greek, especially the restrictive ones, are occasionally introduced into

---

[2] PhG is a Modern Greek dialect spoken today in Greece by about 25 people, who are (descendants of the) refugees relocated from Asia Minor after the Greek-Turkish population exchange of 1923.

the discourse without a [...] relative adverb [my translation]" (Anastasiadis 1976: 248).[3] These authors illustrate both subject and object RCs without *tu* 'that'. In this note, I focus only on subject RCs. Object RCs without *tu* 'that' merit a proper study on their own. (2) is an example of *tu*-less subject RC provided by Andriotis (1948: 51).

(2)   Ídha   [an gorítsi kathéti ačí   monaxó ts].
        saw.SG a   girl   sit.3SG there on-her-own
        'I saw a girl (who/that) was sitting there on her own.'

The aim of this note is to assess whether or not structures as (2), which lack *tu* 'that', do indeed qualify as (some sort of) RCs. To this effect, I compare them to English subject RCs with the null variant of the relative pronoun or with no overt complementizer. I conclude that the existence of complementizerless subject RCs in PhG should be recognized, verifying the claim by Andriotis (1948) and Anastasiadis (1976).

In the next section, I briefly introduce English subject RCs that do not feature an overt relative pronoun or a complementizer, and further summarize two main analyses from a generative perspective.

2   Subject RCs without overt relativizers in English

In informal or colloquial speech, English allows subject RCs in which the relative pronoun or the complementizer can be omitted in certain syntactic environments. Such RCs are dubbed by Jespersen (1928: 143ff) 'subject contact clauses' and they are widely known as 'subject contact relatives' today (Doherty 1994, 2000, Henry 1995; hereafter SCRs). As opposed to regular subject RCs, the distribution of SCRs is reported to be limited: some of the typical contexts in which they are allowed are (i) existential copular sentences (3a), (ii) existential *have* sentences (3b), and complements of the predicates *know*, *meet* and *invent*, when these complements introduce a new referent into the discourse (3c) (Doherty 2000: 72, Henry 1995: 125).[4]

---

[3] According to Anastasiadis (1976) *tu* is an indeclinable relative adverb, comparable to the Modern Greek complementizer *pu* 'that'. In the rest of this note, I will refer to *tu* as a complementizer. See Bağrıaçık (2018) for discussion of the environments in which *tu* is used.

[4] Doherty (1994) argued that in order for a SCR to be licensed, "[the] noun phrase modified by [it] must be interpreted as non-referential." See, however, Doherty (2000), where he no longer maintains this and leaves the question of the precise conditions for SCR-licensing open.

(3) a. There's something keeps upsetting him.
     b. I have this friend lives in Dublin.
     c. I know a smart Greek owns maybe twenty restaurants.

SCRs are claimed to be excluded from other grammatical positions, such as subject position (4a) or the indirect object position (4b) (Doherty 2000: 72-73, Henry 1995: 125-126).[5]

(4) a. *The man worked there was a friend of mine.
     b. *I gave a ticket to a man comes every day.

SCRs have hitherto received two main types of analysis in the generative literature. According to one, which is advanced by Doherty (1994, 2000), SCRs are a variant of true restrictive RCs. They differ from regular RCs in one major respect: whereas regular RCs are standardly assumed to involve a full CP, SCRs have a reduced internal structure; more specifically, they lack the CP layer. According to this account, the example (3a) has the (simplified) structure in (5).

(5) There's [$_{DP}$ [$_{NP}$ something [$_{TP}$ e keeps upsetting him]]].
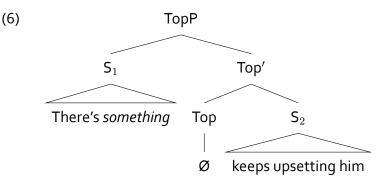
The reader is referred to Doherty (1994, 2000: 81-87) for the details of his analysis, which are immaterial for the current note. The important point is that this approach claims that an SCR is a genuine subordinate clause.

According to a second line of analysis, SCRs involve a topic-comment structure (Henry 1995: 131-135, den Dikken 2005). As a corrolary of this, what superficially is a matrix clause hosting the SCR is analyzed as a topic clause, whose function is to identify one of its subconstituents, the head nominal in particular, as a focus.[6] In turn, what is taken to be a subordinate clause in Doherty's (1994, 2000) analysis is identified by Henry (1995) and den Dikken (2005) as a root clause which serves as the comment of the above-mentioned topic, and which provides information about the focal element. This account assigns to (3a) the structure in (6) (cf. den Dikken 2005: 698). S$_1$ in (6) is the topic clause harboring the focus expression, *something*, and S$_2$ is the root clause making a comment on the focus expression in S$_1$.[7]

---

[5]Certain English dialects, however, do allow SCRs in these positions; see Doherty (2000: 87-89) on these varieties. See also Henry (1995: 125-126) for the distribution of SCRs in Belfast English.

[6]Note, however, that in den Dikken's (2005) analysis, this focus is not represented as occupying a syntactic position.

[7] Note, however, that according to den Dikken (2005: 700), not every SCR can be analyzed

(6)　　　　　　　　　　　　TopP

　　　　　　　　S$_1$　　　　　　　　Top′

　　　　There's *something*　　Top　　　　　S$_2$

　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　Ø　　keeps upsetting him

Syntactically, den Dikken (2005: 698, fn. 6) compares S$_1$ to hanging topics, whose function is also to introduce (the referent of) a nominal into the discourse (7). Hanging topics are not syntactically integrated in the root clause which provides the comment. Observe that the matrix in the comment clause can be omitted (compare (7a) with (7b), cf. Henry 1995: 132, Haegeman 2015), rendering hanging topic constructions structurally akin to SCRs.

(7)　　　a.　　As for syntax, I found it too difficult.
　　　　　　b.　　As for syntax, Ø found it too difficult.

The reader is referred to Henry (1995: 131-135) and den Dikken (2005) for further details of this line of analysis. The relevant point to retain is that the modifying clause (S$_2$) does not form a constituent with the nominal head (or the 'focus expression', according to den Dikken 2005), to the exclusion of the material which occurs linearly to the left of the nominal expression, as shown in (6).

Recently, Haegeman (2015; see also Haegeman et al. 2015) has evaluated the topic-comment representation of SCRs. By adducing a number of observations on their internal and external syntax, she concludes that a topic-comment analysis of SCRs cannot be maintained. In what follows, I will list two of her observations on the internal syntax of SCRs, which are relevant for the initial analysis of *tu*-less subject RCs in PhG.

First, Haegeman (2015) observes that, were a SCR to instantiate a topic-comment structure in which (S$_2$) and the nominal head (focus) do not form a constituent (6), then the head and the modifying clause would not be expected to enter in a coordinate relation with a regular RC. However, she shows that this prediction is not borne out: examples such as (8) are judged grammatical. This provides evidence for Doherty's (1994, 2000) analysis that the nominal head and

---

this way.

the RC form one structural unit.

(8) I have [one colleague runs a sushi shop] and [another one who has a burger restaurant].

<div align="right">(Haegeman 2015: 140, her (16a))</div>

Second, she observes that, according to the configuration in (6), any constituent contained within S_1 is not expected to c-command (any material contained in) S_2; however, this is not necessarily the case. In (9), for instance, the pronoun *his*, contained within the SCR, receives a bound-variable reading, which is possible only if it is in the c-commanding domain of the quantified subject, *every student*, in S_1.

(9) Every student$_i$ is looking for a teacher speaks his$_i$ language.

<div align="right">(Haegeman 2015: 141, her (17a))</div>

The availability of the bound-variable reading of the pronoun in (9) provides additional support for the RC analysis of SCRs, because this approach correctly predicts that the RC is within the c-command domain of the matrix subject.

Based on the above observations (among several others), Haegeman (2015) concludes that a topic-comment analysis of SCRs in English is not tenable, and that her observations offer support for any argument which recognizes SCRs as (some type of) RC.

In the next section, I return to PhG subject RCs without a complementizer.

3   Are there SRCs in PhG?

Unlike English, PhG is a consistent null-subject language (10): there are no expletives in existential clauses with a postverbal subject for instance (10a); similarly, weather verbs never have overt subjects (10b). As expected, referential pronominal subjects can also be omitted (10c).

(10) a. Ísanti   dhíu nécis   sin   stráta.
          were.3PL two women on-the road
          'There were two women on the road.'

      b. (*Ató) vrešízi.   c. (Até) kathéti ačí.
             It   rain.3SG   She sit.3SG there
          'It is raining.'   'She is sitting there.'

Given that pronominal subjects can freely be omitted (10c), it is at first blush difficult to conclude whether (2) is a genuine RC, as Anastasiadis (1976) suggests, or whether it involves two independent sentences with null subjects, as in (11).

(11)   Ø ídha   an gorítsi. Ø kathéti ačí   monaxó ts.
          saw.1SG a   girl   sit.3SG there on-her-own
          'I saw a girl. She is sitting there alone.'   (cf. (2))

Informants agree withAnastasiadis (1976) and accept (2) with a RC reading: they state that there is no intonation break between *gorítsi* 'girl' and *kathéti* '(she) is sitting', contrary to the case in (11).[8] Furthermore, for these informants, (12a) and (12b) are associated with distinct readings: (12a), where two sentences are simply placed side by side, means there were two, and only two, women in the car and they were both wearing necklaces. On the other hand, (12b), under a RC reading, is reported to imply the existence of other women in the car as well, who were, however, not wearing necklaces.

(12)   a.   So   tomofíli ísanti   mo dhíu néčis. Forénkanti kerdanníxi.
            in-the car   were.3PL only two women wore.3PL   necklace.
            'In the car, there were only two women. They were wearing neck-laces.'
    b.   So   tomofíli ísanti   mo dhíu néčis forénkanti kerdanníxi.
            in-the car   were.3PL only two women wore.3PL   necklace.
            'In the car, there were only two women who were wearing neck-laces.'

Structurally, the reading in (12a) suggests that the only focalized constituent c-commanded by the focus sensitive exhaustivity operator *mo* 'only' is the DP *dhíu néčis* 'two women'; the second sentence *forénkanti kerdanníxi* 'they were wearing necklaces', however, is not in the c-commanding domain of *mo* 'only' as operator-focus dependencies do not cross sentence boundaries. As a result, in the first sentence, the number of the women that were in the car is strictly de-fined as "2". The second sentence then merely provides additional information on the only two women that were in the car. The reading in (12b), on the other hand, suggests that the constituent *forénkanti kerdanníxi* 'were wearing neck-laces' functions as a restrictor of the set of referents for the DP *dhíu néčis* 'two

---

[8] See further Andriotis (1948: 51) and Anastasiadis (1976: 248), who do not put any punctua-tion mark (comma, period etc.) between the head noun and the associated modifying clause in examples of SCRs, which would possibly mark an intonation break.

women'; in turn, the string *dhíu néčis forénkanti kerdanníxi* 'two women (who) were wearing necklaces' is c-commanded by *mo* 'only' as one single constituent. Due to the existence of the restricting clause, the sentence receives a reading in which the number of women that were at the same time both in the car and wearing necklaces was only "2". This implies that other women might have also been in the car, who were not wearing necklaces. Based on the evidence (12b) provides, we may preliminarily conclude that *tu*-less restrictive subject RCs exist in PhG, as Anastasiadis (1976) suggests.[9]

The omission of *tu* 'that' in subject RCs is not entirely free, however. The environments which can harbor *tu*-less subject RCs are near-identical to those in which English SCR are tolerated: *tu* 'that' omission is most naturally tolerated in complements of the predicate *thoró* 'see', when this predicate introduces a new referent into the discourse (2), in copular existential sentences (12b), and in *have* existential sentences (13a). Preliminary judgments suggest that, in these cases, *tu* 'that' can be deleted as long as the antecedent is indefinite, cf. (13a) with (13b):[10]

(13) a. Éxu   [a jos (tu) kamnóni sa   Ádhana].
          have.1SG a son that work.3SG in-the Adana
          'I have a son who works in Adana'.
      b. Dáma mu íxa   [to jo mu *(tu) kamnóni sa   Ádhana].
          with me had.1SG the son my   that work.3SG in-the Adana
          'With me, I had my son who works in Adana.'

Speaker judgments reveal that subject RCs without the complementizer *tu* 'that' are severely degraded when in subject or indirect object positions:

(14) a. [An gorítsi *(tu) kathéti ačí   monaxó ts] irévi   xalxás.
           a   girl   that sit.3SG there on-her-own want.3SG bagel
           'A girl who is sitting there on her own wants a bagel.'

---

[9] It should be noted that *tu* 'that' omission is allowed only when the RC is a postnominal one, cf. (2) with (i):

(i)   *Ídha   [kathéti ačí   monaxó ts   an gorítsi].
        saw.SG sit.3SG there on-her-own a   girl
        'I saw a girl (who/that) was sitting there on her own.'

[10] The examples cited in Andriotis (1948: 51) and Anastasiadis (1976: 248) also verify these generalizations.

b. Pítaksa   an xalxás s   [an gorítsi *(tu) kathéti ačí   monaxó ts].
    sent.1SG a   bagel to a   girl   that sit.3SG there on-her-own
    'I sent a bagel to a girl who was sitting there on her own.'

When the distributional similarity between English SCRs and PhG RCs that allow complementizer omission is taken into consideration, we can tentatively conclude that a structure such as (2) can be referred to as a SCR.

There are three (additional) pieces of evidence that suggest that in PhG a SCR forms a constituent with its associated nominal 'head', which, in turn, suggest that SRCs are structurally embedded, rather than independent sentences.[11]

First, a SRC can (marginally) occur as a left-peripheral topic, when the predicate of the matrix clause is *thoró* 'see':

(15)   ?[An av   néka   (tu) ifanéni   an t eséna]$_i$, čo ídha   ta$_i$ so
         an other woman that weave.3SG like you   not saw.1SG her in.the
         ómbri mu.
         life   my
         'Another woman who weaves like you, I have not seen in my life.'

Second, similar to Haegeman's (2015) observation for English SCRs, a SCR in PhG can also be coordinated with a regular relative clause, as shown in (16).

(16)   Éxu   [a jos (tu) kamnóni sa   Ádhana] če [an góri   tu
         have.1SG a son that work.3SG in-the Adana   and a daughter that
         paredhóthin so   Everéki].
         married.3SG in-the Everek
         'I have a son who works in Adana and a daughter who is married in Ev-
         erek.'

Finally, again similar to the case of English SCRs as observed by Haegeman (2015) (9), a quantificational element c-commanding the (head of) the SRC can bind a pronominal element inside the RC, giving rise to a distributive interpretation for the pronoun:

(17)   [Xer o mástrus]$_i$ éši   [a čiráxus   (tu) katéši   ti
         every the master   have.3SG an apprentice that understand.3SG the

---

[11] The observations that follow also argue against a possible topic-comment analysis of SCRs in PhG. Nevertheless, as I have not investigated all the possible predictions of such an analysis in PhG, I do not want to make reference to it in the rest of this note.

gwósa   tu$_i$].
language his
'Every master has an apprentice who understands his language.'

Under the reading in which (17) involves two independent sentences, the bound variable interpretation of the pronoun *tu* 'his' is no longer available, suggesting that the pronoun is not c-commanded by the quantified subject of the first sentence:

(18)   [Xer o mástrus]$_i$ éši   a čiráxus. Katéši   ti
         every the master   have.3SG an apprentice understand.3SG the
        gwósa   tu$_{*i/j}$.
        language his
        'Every master has an apprentice. He understands his language.'

4   Conclusions

In this brief note, I have provided a preliminary analysis of subject RCs in PhG which allow for complementizer deletion. Based on distributional evidence, I concluded that the PhG structures under discussion are very similar to English SCRs. In relation to the internal syntax of PhG complementizerless RCs, I concluded that the relevant structures form a constituent with their nominal head, much as is the case in canonical (head-external) RCs. The precise structure of complementizerless RCs in PhG, the exact nature of the environments they are tolerated in, and how they differ from RCs with an overt complementizer are issues that await further research.

References

Anastasiadis, V. 1976. *I sintaksi sto Pharasiotiko idioma tis Kappadokias [The syntax of the dialect of Pharasa in Cappadocia]*: University of Ioannina dissertation.

Andriotis, N.P. 1948. *To glossiko idioma ton Pharason [The dialect of Pharasa]*. Athens: Ikaros.

Bağrıaçık, M. 2018. *Pharasiot Greek: Word order and clause structure*: Ghent University dissertation.

Bağrıaçık, M. & Danckaert, L. 2018. The origin of prenominal and postnominal relative clauses in Pharasiot Greek. Ms., Ghent University and University of Lille.

den Dikken, M. 2005. A comment on the topic of topic-comment. *Lingua* 115. 691–710.

Doherty, C. 1994. The syntax of subject contact relatives. In K. Beats, G. Cooke, D. Kathman, S. Kita, K.E. McCullough & D. Testen (eds.), *Proceedings of CLS 29*. 155–165. Chicago, IL: The University of Chicago Press.

Doherty, C. 2000. *Clauses without "that". The case for bare sentential complementation in English*. New York and London: Garland.

Haegeman, L. 2015. A note on English subject contact relatives. In A.J. Gallego & D. Ott (eds.), *50 years later: Reflections on Chomsky's Aspects (MITWPL 77)*. 133–146. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Haegeman, L., Weir, A., Danckaert, L., D'hulster, T. & Buelens, L. 2015. Against the root analysis of subject contact relatives in English. *Lingua* 163. 61–74.

Henry, A. 1995. *Belfast English and Standard English: Dialect variation and parameter setting*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Jespersen, O. 1928. *A modern English grammar on historical principles. Part III, syntax, II. volume*. London: George Allen & Unwin Ltd.

Subjunctive selection in French vs. Balkan

Lena Baunaz & Eric Lander[*]

1 Verbal and clausal mood

Languages vary as to how and where they mark subjunctive vs. indicative mood (Sočanać 2017, among others). Whereas French marks the indicative vs. subjunctive mood on the verb (1), Balkan languages use a special (so-called) complementizer to indicate subjunctive mood (2) (see Giannakidou 1998, 2009 and subseq. as well as Roussou 2000, 2009, 2010 and subseq. for Modern Greek; see Sočanać 2017 for details on Slavic and Balkan labguages).

(1)   a.   Mirka dit que Roger **est** prêt à l'heure.   (French)
              M.   says that R.   is   ready on time
        b.   Mirka ordonne que Roger **soit** prêt à l'heure.
              M.   orders   that R.   be.SUBJ ready on time

(2)   a.   Nomizo **oti** kerdizei   o Janis.   (MG)
             think1SG that win3SG.IMPERF the John
             'I think that John is winning.'
        b.   Thelo   **na**   kerdisi   o Janis
             want1SG that.SUBJ win3SG.PERF the John
             'I want John to win.'   (Giannakidou 2009: 1887)

Most of the time, indicative and subjunctive mood morphology are syncretic with one another in French, but certain verbs–such as *être* 'be'–retain distinct subjunctive morphology. In Modern Greek (MG) and Balkan more generally,

---

[*]We dedicate this paper to Liliane Haegeman, who among countless other good deeds is directly responsible for our research partnership, which has continued to bear fruit ever since our first collaboration in 2014, and for this we couldn't be more thankful. Each of us met Liliane during our undergraduate studies, more than 23 years ago in Geneva for Lena and 10 years ago in Ghent for Eric. She is a continuing source of inspiration for both of us.

subjunctive morphology has been lost altogether and been replaced by what is known as *perfective non-past* (PNP) morphology, which encodes tense and aspect but not mood (mood being marked on the so-called complementizer).[1] The French strategy of marking subjunctive on the embedded verb is traditionally called *verbal mood*; the Balkan strategy of marking subjunctive on the complementizer may be referred to as *clausal mood* (see Sočanać 2017 and references there).

2   Veridicality and Mood selection

It is generally accepted that the subjunctive mood is a *dependent mood* selected under verbs which are associated with some special semantic features (Quer 1998, 2001, 2009, Giannakidou 1998, 2009, among others). Giannakidou, using MG data, argues that veridicality, as defined in (3), licenses mood choice:

(3)   **Veridicality** (Giannakidou 1998, 2009)
       A propositional operator *F* is veridical iff from the truth of *Fp* we can infer that *p* is true according to some individual *x* (i.e. in some individual *x*'s epistemic model).

According to (3), an embedded proposition has to be true for at least one individual (the subject of the main verb and/or the speaker), in all the worlds of a relevant model. Giannakidou claims that veridicality triggers the indicative mood in the embedded clause and non-veridicality triggers the subjunctive mood.

   The correlation between mood and veridicality applies very well in MG and most of the Balkan Slavic languages (see Todorovic 2012), but it fails to apply to Romance's emotive factive complements (Quer 1998, 2001, 2009, Baunaz & Puskás 2014, Baunaz 2015, 2017). In Romance, here illustrated with French, predicates like *regretter* 'regret', *être content* 'be happy', etc. unexpectedly trigger the subjunctive mood, as seen in (4), even though these predicates are veridical according to (3):

---

[1]There is a long-standing debate on the status of *na* in the syntactic literature: is it a mood particle (i.e. an inflectional mood head, see Philippaki-Warburton 1994, 1998, Giannakidou 1998, 2009 among many others), a complementizer (Agouraki 1991, Tsoulas 1993 and Roussou 2000, a.o.) or a hybrid, that is a mood head moving to C (Giannakidou 2009)? See Giannakidou & Mari (2017) for a state of the art on this topic. See below for our take on the matter.

(4)   Mirka regrette que Roger ait   perdu.   (French)
       Mirka regrets   that Roger has.SUBJ lost

It appears that Giannakidou's definition of veridicality cannot account for mood distribution cross-linguistically.

Baunaz & Puskás (2014) refine (3) by investigating the notion of "some individual", as applied to six verb classes of embedding verbs in French. Baunaz (2018) extends their findings to Balkan languages. They argue that these predicates can be classified into three groups if one takes into account the idea that the truth of the embedded proposition can relate to both the subject and the speaker (= strong veridicality), to either the subject or the speaker (= relative veridicality), or to none of them (= non-veridicality). Note that verbs can be "ambiguous" in being either strongly veridical or relative-veridical (MG *thimame* 'regret' or French *comprendre* 'understand' are cases in point; see Table 1).

	English tr.	MG	SC	Bg	Fr
Strong veridical	'remember' 'regret' 'understand'	*thimame*	*sjetiti se* %*žaliti*	*pomnja sǎžaljavam*	*se rappeler* *comprendre*
Relative veridical	'remember' 'regret' 'understand'	*thimame* *lipame*	%*sjetiti se* *žaliti*	*pomnja sǎžaljavam*	*regretter* *comprendre*
Non-veridical	'say' 'want'	*leo* *thelo*	*reći* *željeti*	*kazvam* *iskam*	*dire* *vouloir*

Table 1: Some (non-)veridical verbs in Modern Greek, Serbo-Croatian, Bulgarian and French (from Baunaz 2018)

The distinction between strong and relative veridicality is tracked by different complementizers in Balkan (see Table 3), or by subjunctive vs. indicative mood on the embedded verb in French (see Table 2).

The three-way distinction above does not provide an orderly way of accounting for mood selection in French, though: strong-veridical verbs and some non-veridical verbs select for indicative complements, whereas relative-veridical and some non-veridical verbs select for subjunctive complements. This results in an *ABA violation, as indicated by shading in Table 2. In MG (and Balkan more generally), veridicality and mood-marking appear to be unrelated too: non-veridical verbs can take an *oti*-clause with an indicative embedded verb, or they can ap-

pear with subjunctive *na*-complements. This is summed up in Table 2:

Main Predicates	Complementizer		Mood on V	
	Fr	MG	Fr	MG
Strongly veridical	que	pu	indicative	indicative
Relative veridical	que	pu/oti	subjunctive	indicative
Non-veridical 1	que	oti	indicative	indicative
Non-veridical 2	que	na (subjunctive)	subjunctive	none (PNP)

Table 2: Mood and veridicality in French and Modern Greek

The tripartition does, however, show promise in terms of complementizer se-lection, especially by splitting the non-veridical group in two (an 'indicative' NV1 and a 'subjunctive' NV2). Table 3 illustrates complementizer selection under the relevant predicates in the four languages at stake.

	MG	Bg	Serbian	Croatian	French
Strongly veridical	pu	deto	što	da	que
Relative veridical	pu oti	če	što	da	que
Non-veridical 1	oti	če	da	da	que
Non-veridical 2	na	da	da	da	que

Table 3: Finite complementizers in Modern Greek, Bulgarian, Serbian, Croatian, French

There are no problematic *ABA violations in Table 3. In other words, veridicality cleanly tracks complementizer selection in French and Balkan.

Focusing on Balkan languages, Baunaz (2015, 2016, 2018) argues that the complementizer morpheme has an internal functional sequence (fseq), and that the complementizer may lexicalize differently sized structures from this fseq. She also claims that the distribution of complementizers is governed by veridi-cality and shows that veridicality plays a role in so-called factive islands, called *veridicality islands* in Baunaz (2018). Based on syncretism patterns with comple-mentizers and on wh-extractions out of (non-)veridical domains in four different languages, she argues that the predicates in Table 1 select for complementizers of different 'sizes'. She claims that the size of the complementizer plays a role in strong, weak, or non-island configurations. The basic complementizer-fseq

resulting from Baunaz's work is illustrated in (5). Note that under this analysis, *na* (and its cognates in Balkan languages) is considered to be a complementizer of the smallest size, with distinct syntactic properties from, say, non-veridical complementizers (see fn. 1).

(5)   strong-veridical > relative-veridical > non-veridical 1 > non-veridical 2

Baunaz also adopts the idea from Manzini & Savoia (2011) and Roussou (2010) that complementizers may introduce a *propositional* operator (OP_{prop}). This operator closes off the clause and turns it into a proposition. Subjunctive clauses, which are open propositions, do not involve such an operator.

In this paper, we would like to reconcile the theory of complementizer selection summed up in Table 3 with the way in which mood is realized (Table 2). We will explain the apparent *ABA in French as well as some of the properties of the MG mood complementizer *na* (and its Balkan cognates, as described in Sočanać 2017) by taking a nanosyntactic approach.

3   The analysis: Peeling and packaging

In our view, the apparent ABA in French, seen in Table 2, is only an illusion. It is the result of unduly mixing up two independent processes: on the one hand, the internal structure of complementizers in terms of veridicality, and on the other hand, the selection of embedded mood by certain matrix verbs. Taken on its own, neither process violates the *ABA theorem. As we saw above in Table 3 that the veridicality domain does not show any complementizers in an illicit ABA-type configuration. And in Table 4 we see that mood is triggered by the kind of selecting predicate, i.e. the internal structure of the predicate.[2]
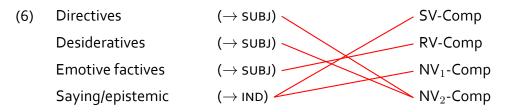
As seen in Table 4, indicative and subjunctive obey the adjacency requirement on syncretism, that is, they do not show any illicit ABAs.

The problem arises in the observation that a relative-veridical complementizer appears to 'select' a subjunctive embedded verb. However, the correct way of framing this fact is not that the complementizer selects the embedded mood; rather, it is the higher matrix verb that is responsible for this. Veridicality is an (at least partially) independent variable, with different complementizer structures being compatible with different matrix verbs (6).

---

[2] For reasons of space, we borrow Baunaz & Puskás's (2014, under review) classification of embedding verbs without explanation. The reader is referred to their work for details.

Predicate class	Internal structure				Selects
Directives	CAUSE >	VOLITIONAL >	EMOTIVE >	SENTIENT	SUBJ
Desideratives		VOLITIONAL >	EMOTIVE >	SENTIENT	SUBJ
Emotive factives			EMOTIVE >	SENTIENT	SUBJ
V. of saying/ epistemic				SENTIENT	IND

Table 4: Matrix predicate classes and embedded mood

(6)

Directives	($\rightarrow$ SUBJ)	SV-Comp
Desideratives	($\rightarrow$ SUBJ)	RV-Comp
Emotive factives	($\rightarrow$ SUBJ)	NV_1-Comp
Saying/epistemic	($\rightarrow$ IND)	NV_2-Comp

As seen in (6), RV and NV_2 complementizers are compatible with verbs taking the subjunctive mood (directives, desideratives and emotive factive verbs); SV and NV_1 are compatible with verbs taking the indicative (verbs of saying and epistemic verbs).

We make two main assumptions in our analysis. First, selection is local. Second, the order in which the main elements of the biclausal configuration are generated is **not** the following:

(7)   Conventional ordering (*not* adopted here):
  i.   [embedded verb/clause]
  ii.   [Comp [embedded verb/clause]]
  iii.   [matrix verb/clause [Comp [embedded verb/clause]]]

Instead we will assume that veridicality – the stance taken by some individual with regard to a proposition – is in some sense the 'core' of the sentence; therefore we will hypothesize that the complementizer, as encoder of veridicality, is generated first.

(8)   [RV [NV_1 [NV_2 [C]]]]   (relative-veridical Comp)

In (8) we have provided the relative-veridical structure, but any complementizer

structure would also be available: strong-veridical [SV [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]]], or non-veridical [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]] or [NV$_2$ [C]]. We have chosen the relative-veridical structure because it partakes in the problematic ABA pattern discussed above.

The next step, for our purposes, is external merge of the verb with inflectional layers above (TAM, where *Subj* stands for subjunctive mood; *Prop* stands for proposition, which is also the feature yielding indicative morphology). This is seen in (9)).

(9)   [Prop [Subj [T [Asp [V]]]]] + [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]]

Following a 'peeling' approach to selection (unpublished work by Michal Starke, Caha 2009: ch. 4; see Taraldsen Medová & Wiland 2018 for a recent implementation), we will take the full structure of the verb to be merged at this stage, with selection of a subset of this structure happening in a later step, leaving behind a so-called peel.

In the next stage of the derivation the matrix verb is merged. As discussed above, it is the class of the matrix verb that determines whether the embedded mood is indicative or subjunctive.[3] In this case, with the relative-veridical Comp, we have an emotive-factive matrix predicate.

(10)   [V$_{matrix}$P] + [Prop [Subj [T [Asp [V]]]]] + [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]]

        here: [V$_{matrix}$P] = [EMOTIVE [SENTIENT [VP]]]
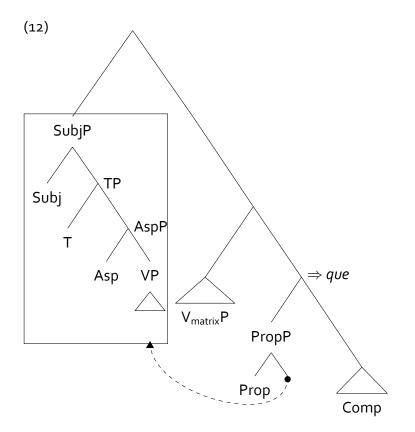
At this stage of the derivation, the matrix VP is in a local relation to the embedded verb; we posit that this kind of relation makes it possible for the matrix verb to select some subset of the verbal structure, which here would be a verb with subjunctive inflection.

Selection involves movement of the subset to the left of the matrix VP, as sketched in (11).

(11)   **[Subj [T [Asp [V]]]]** + [V$_{matrix}$P] + [Prop [__]] + [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]]
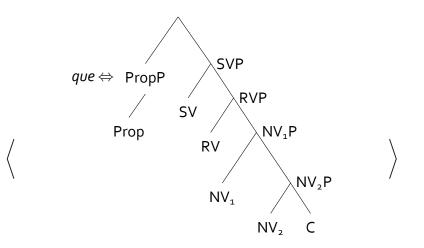
Importantly, removing the subjunctive structure leaves behind a Prop layer without its complement (since SubjP has been moved out); this Prop 'peel' can be spelled out as part of the complementizer itself, i.e. Fr. *que*, as seen here:

---

[3] See Baunaz (2017) and Baunaz & Puskás (under review) for arguments in favor of the idea that what determines the subjunctive mood is the emotive feature in the fseq of the matrix verb.

(12)

SubjP

Subj

TP

T

AspP

Asp   VP

$V_{matrix}P$

$\Rightarrow$ *que*

PropP

Prop

Comp
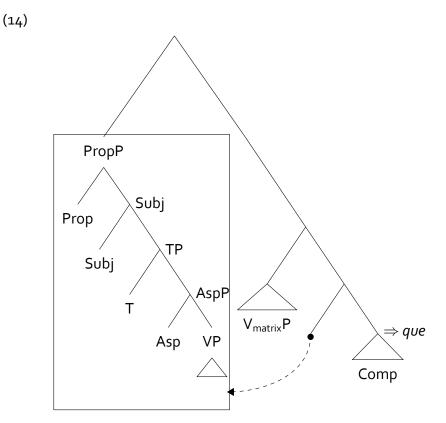
This means that the structure of French *que* as it is stored in the lexicon would look like ((13)).

(13)   Lexical structure for Fr. *que*

$$
\left\langle
\begin{array}{c}
que \Leftrightarrow \quad \text{PropP} \\
\quad\;\; \text{SVP} \\
\text{SV} \quad \text{RVP} \\
\text{Prop} \quad \text{NV}_1\text{P} \\
\text{RV} \quad \text{NV}_2\text{P} \\
\text{NV}_1 \\
\text{NV}_2 \quad \text{C}
\end{array}
\right\rangle
$$

In other words, the Prop peel encodes movement of a subjunctive verb out from underneath. However, it is not *only* in such cases that que can be spelled out. *Que* can also be spelled out if an indicative verb has been selected/moved to the left of the matrix VP, as seen in (14).

(14)

PropP

Prop

Subj

Subj

TP

T

AspP

Asp

VP

$V_{matrix}P$

$\Rightarrow$ *que*

Comp

The lexical entry in (13) can still, by the Superset Principle, spell out the leftover structure in (14) as *que*. That is to say, the lexical structure with the peel in (13) is still a superset of [sv [rv [nv$_1$ [nv$_2$ [C]]]]] (or any subset of this structure). In other words, *que* is spelled out whether indicative or subjunctive has been selected by the matrix verb.[4]
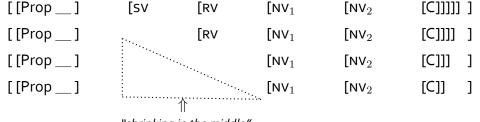
Thus the matrix verb does not directly determine the kind (size) of the complementizer. In other words, the complementizer grows and shrinks independently of the behavior of the matrix verb and the process of mood-selection happening above it. The lexical entry in (13) is able to accommodate this fact if we adopt the Revised Superset Principle, given in (15).

---

[4]We assume that later reshuffling in the derivation will move [V$_{matrix}$P [Comp]] to the left of the embedded verb/clause, giving us the order [*matrix - Comp*] *embedded* ____. Furthermore, within the V-zone, we assume that VP eventually moves up to the left of the layers above it, giving the expected order [*verb*] - INFL ____.

(15)   **Revised Superset Principle** (Vanden Wyngaerd 2018: 289, his. (6))
A lexical entry L may spell out a syntactic node SN iff the features of L
are a superset of the features dominated by SN.

This relaxation of the 'classical' Superset Principle is required on independent
grounds (see Vanden Wyngaerd 2018 for more details). For our purposes here,
(15) allows for the lexical structure of *que* in (13) to map, at least in principle, onto
all of the following syntactic structures:

(16)   a.   subjunctive verb selected

[[Prop __]	[SV	[RV	[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]]]]
[[Prop __]		[RV	[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]]]
[[Prop __]			[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]]
[[Prop __]			[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]
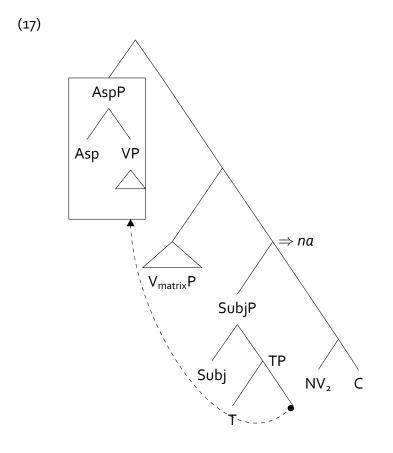
⇑
"shrinking in the middle"

b.   indicative verb selected

[SV	[RV	[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]]]
	[RV	[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]]
		[NV$_1$	[NV$_2$	[C]]]
			[NV$_2$	[C]]

In (16a) we indicate that the complementizer zone can shrink while still keep-
ing the Prop peel in place at the top; this is a kind of "shrinking in the middle"
(as Vanden Wyngaerd 2018 puts it), a feature of the Revised Superset Principle
which is absent in the traditional Superset Principle.

Turning now to Greek, it turns out that our analysis of French has some in-
teresting consequences for the subjunctive non-veridical (=[NV$_2$ [C]]) comple-
mentizer-like particle MG *na*. First of all, these kinds of complements are not
propositional and thus not expected to build all the way up to Prop, rather the
structure stops at Subj. Second, recall that the embedded verb does not display
a morphological subjunctive but rather *perfective non-past* inflection. For our
purposes, PNP corresponds to [Asp [V]].

(17)

Crucially, once this part has been extracted from the verbal structure, we are left with a peel made up of Subj and T. Thus the lexical entry for *na* is the one given in (18).

(18)   ⟨ *na* ⇔ [Subj [T ___]] [NV₂ [C]] ⟩

This entry accounts for two major properties of *na*, namely that it is usually taken as a marker of subjunctive and also that it is an infinitival marker in T – a syncretism which is in fact widespread in Balkan.

Zeroing in on the C-zone, note that the lexical structure of *na* contains only [NV₂ [C]] and not a larger set of veridicality features (as in the lexical structure of Fr. *que*). The higher veridicality features are instead spelled out in MG by *pu* and *oti*. Embedded verbs under *pu* and *oti* cannot take PNP but instead show indicative morphology. Furthermore, contrary to *na*-clauses, *pu*- and *oti*-clauses

are propositional. Thus we can assume for *pu* and *oti* that the full PropP structure has been extracted in these contexts, leaving no peels behind. The lexical entries we land on are:

(19) a. ⟨ *pu* ⇔ [SV [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]]] ⟩
      b. ⟨ *oti* ⇔   [RV [NV$_1$ [NV$_2$ [C]]]] ⟩

The *lack* of peels in (19), then, encodes the fact that a larger verbal structure (namely indicative, requiring Prop in our analysis) occurs under *pu* and *oti*. The bigger peel in the lexical structure of *na*, on the other hand, encodes the fact that a smaller verbal structure (PNP, basically just a species of aspectual marking) occurs under *na*.

4   Conclusions

Nanosyntax makes it possible to 'package' features (and then store them in the lexicon) in different ways cross-linguistically. For us, it is crucial that Subj can be spelled out on the embedded verb in French, which has *verbal mood*, but as part of the complementizer *na* in MG, where *na* is a manifestation of *clausal mood*. This general nanosyntactic strategy has in this paper been combined with a peeling approach to selection, whereby a leftover peel from the verbal zone implies what kind of inflected verb has been extracted. We show that packaging and peeling, combined with the assumption that the complementizer is built *before* the embedded verb/clause, can be utilized to coherently account for the facts of subjunctive selection in French vs. Balkan.

References

Agouraki, G. 1991. A Modern Greek complementizer and its significance for UG. *UCL Working Papers in Linguistics* 3. 1–24.

Baunaz, L. 2015. On the various sizes of complementizers. *Probus* 27(2). 193–236.

Baunaz, L. 2016. Deconstructing complementizers in Serbo-Croatian, Modern Greek and Bulgarian. In C. Hammerly & B. Prickett (eds.), *Proceedings of NELS 46 (1)*. 69–77. Amherst, MA: Graduate Linguistics Student Association.

Baunaz, L. 2017. French predicates selecting the subjunctive mood under the microscope: The emotive factor. In S. Perpiñán, D. Heap, I. Moreno-Villamar

& A. Soto-Corominas (eds.), *Romance Languages and Linguistic Theory 11. selected papers from the 44th Linguistic Sympositum on Romance Languages, london, ontario*. 9–31. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Baunaz, L. 2018. Decomposing complementizers: The Fseq of French, Modern Greek, Serbo-Croatian and Bulgarian complementizers. In L. Baunaz, K. De Clercq, L. Haegeman & E. Lander (eds.), *Exploring nanosyntax* Oxford Studies in Comparative Syntax. 149–179. New York: Oxford University Press.

Baunaz, L. & Puskás, G. 2014. The selection of French mood. In M.H. Côté & E. Mathieu (eds.), *Variation within and across Romance languages*. 233–253. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Baunaz, L. & Puskás, G. under review. Complementizer functional sequence: The contribution of Italo-Romance .

Caha, P. 2009. *The nanosyntax of case*: University of Tromsø dissertation.

Giannakidou, A. 1998. *Polarity sensitivity as (non)veridical dependency*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Giannakidou, A. 2009. The dependency of the subjunctive revisited: Temporal semantics and polarity. *Lingua* 10. 1883–1908.

Giannakidou, A. & Mari, A. 2017. (Non)veridicality and mood selection in complement clauses. Unpublished manuscript, University of Chicago and Institut Jean Nicod, CNRS/ENS/EHESS/PSL. To be published as Chapter 3 of *Non-verdicality in grammar and thought*. `http://home.uchicago.edu/~giannaki/pubs/subjunctive.Chapter3.book.june25.pdf`.

Manzini, M.R. & Savoia, L.M. 2011. *Grammatical categories. variation in Romance languages*, vol. 128 Cambridge Studies in Linguistics. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Philippaki-Warburton, I. 1994. The subjunctive mood and the syntactic status of the particle *na* in Modern Greek. *Folia Linguistica* 28(3-4). 297–328.

Philippaki-Warburton, I. 1998. Functional categories and Modern Greek. *The Linguistic Review* 15. 159–186.

Quer, J. 1998. *Moods at interface*: Utrecht University dissertation.

Quer, J. 2001. Interpreting mood. *Probus* 13. 81–111.

Quer, J. 2009. Twists of mood: The distribution and interpretation of the indicative and the subjunctive. *Lingua* 119. 1779–1787.

Roussou, A. 2000. On the left periphery: Modal particles and complementisers. *Journal of Greek Linguistics* 1. 65–94.

Roussou, A. 2009. In the mood for control. *Lingua* 119. 1811–1836.

Roussou, A. 2010. Selecting complementisers. *Lingua* 120. 582–603.

Sočanać, T. 2017. *Subjunctive complements in Slavic languages: A syntax-semantics interface approach*: University of Geneva dissertation.

Taraldsen Medová, L. & Wiland, B. 2018. Functional sequence zones in Slavic L > T > N participles. In L. Baunaz, K. De Clercq, L. Haegeman & E. Lander (eds.), *Exploring nanosyntax*. 305–328. New York: Oxford University Press.

Todorovic, N. 2012. *The subjunctive and indicative da-complements in Serbian. A syntactic-semantic approach*: University of Illinois at Chicago dissertation.

Tsoulas, G. 1993. Remarks on the structure and interpretation of *na*-clauses. *Studies in Greek Linguistics* 14. 191–206.

Vanden Wyngaerd, G. 2018. The feature structure of pronouns: A probe into multidimensional paradigms. In L. Baunaz, K. De Clercq, L. Haegeman & E. Lander (eds.), *Exploring nanosyntax*. 277–304. Oxford University Press.

'U is' or 'U bent'?
Polite forms of address and verbal agreement in historical Dutch and Ibero-Romance*

Miriam Bouzouita & Anne Breitbarth

1   Introduction

It is well-known that the (polite) forms of address in Dutch underwent a cyclic replacement by which the 2nd person nominative plural pronoun *ghi/gij* became the formal 2nd nominative singular pronoun (V(os)-form), and later the informal 2nd nominative singular pronoun (T(u)-form), replacing older *du*, while the 2nd person accusative plural pronoun *u* first became the accusative of the new singular V-form, and later the nominative V-form. The developments are summarised in Table 1 (adapted from van Leuvensteijn 2002: 289 and Vermaas 2005).

Table 1: Cyclic shifts in 2nd person pronouns in the history of Dutch

	Sg		Pl	
	Nom	Acc/Dat	Nom	Acc/Dat
Middle Dutch (c. 1150-1500)	*du*	*di*	*ghi*	*u*
1500-1700	*du, ghi*	*di, u*	*ghi*	*u*
17th/18th c.	*gij*	*u*	*gij*	*u*
	je/jij	*je/jou*		
today	T: *je/jij*	*je/jou*	*jullie*	*jullie*
			< *gij lieden*	*u lieden*
	V: *u*	*u*	*u*	*u*

A question that has not received much attention at all in the literature is how the verbal agreement with these pronouns evolved. There are two theories regarding the rise of nominative *u* that make different predictions with respect to this question. First, according to e.g. Vor der Hake (1911), the nominative use of *u* arose from the accusative one by semantic shift. Second, as proposed by Van der Horst (2008: 1094), the nominative use of *u* arose via an intermediate step, namely the epistolary forms of address consisting of a (possessive) pronoun and a honorific noun, *U.Ed.*, *U.E.* (*uw edelheid*, 'your honour') and *U.L.* (*uwe(r) liefde* 'your love / kindness') used in letters from the 17th century onwards. These were first only used in writing, originally in chancery style for nobility, and then oralised as *uwé* [uw'e:] / ['ʊwɛ], and spread top-town through social classes (Kern 1911, Heeroma 1934). The first theory predicts that 2nd person agreement on the verb with subject-*u* should be older, as the accusative form of the 2nd person pronoun, when it is reanalysed as nominative, is still a 2nd person pronoun. Under the second theory, one would expect that *u(wé)* should first have occurred with 3rd person agreement, as the form of address is a noun phrase.[1] Van der Horst bases this latter theory on a comparison with a similar development in German, where the new V-form *Sie* 'they > you(V)', argued to be a pronominalization of *Ihro Gnaden* 'your mercies' (e.g. Simon 2003), and goes with 3rd person agreement on the verb.

Our paper departs from three observations. First, there is variation in present-day Dutch regarding the agreement morphology on the finite verb that goes with the V-form *u*:[2] where this morphology is not syncretic (as it is in most verbs), it varies between 2nd and 3rd person agreement. In (1), this is illustrated for the verbs *hebben* 'have', *zullen* 'shall', and *kunnen* 'can'.

(1)   2nd person: *u hebt/zult/kunt*
        3rd person: *u heeft/zal/kan*
        'you (V) have/shall/can'

Second, the earliest (pre-1600!) occurrences of *u* used as a nominative pronoun that are reported in the literature occur with 2nd person agreement on the verb (Paardekooper 1996). This is a problem for Van der Horst's theory of the devel-

---

[1]"Als een briefschrijver de geadresseerde met *Uwe Edelheid* aanspreekt, gebruikt hij een substantiefgroep met *Edelheid* als kern. Hier horen de persoonlijke, bezittelijke en wederkerende voornaamwoorden van de derde persoon bij." (van Leuvensteijn 2002: 290)

[2]We are not considering the variation in colloquial Belgian Dutch regarding the use of *u* in the present paper.
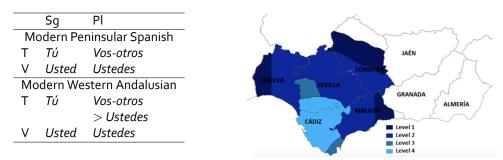
opment of the verbal agreement with *u*.[3]

(2)   *ende **u hebt** in dese wech al 7 vame 6 vame ende bij lant komende 5 vamen*
       'And you have in this way already 7 fathom, 6 fathom, and, coming onto the shore, 5 fathom.'
       ([1599] *De tweede schipvaart der Nederlanders naar Oost-Indië* […])

(3)   *Wat belangt de regerijnge is off soude te lanck sijn te verhaelen, dat **sult v** alles verstaen godt ons met lijff in Nerlant helpende*
       'Concerning the government, it is or would be too long to tell (all), you shall understand all of that, if God help us with life in the Netherlands.'
       ([1599] *B. Journaal van Reijer Cornelisz.*)

The third observation comes from outside the Germanic sphere. To be more precise, Lara Bermejo (2015, 2016a,b) observes that in some Ibero-Romance (IR) varieties, such as Western Andalusian Spanish, the plural V-form *ustedes* has replaced the plural T-form *vosotros*, but the agreement of e.g. the reflexive pronouns, object clitics (*os > se*) and the finite verbs lag behind, varying between 2nd and 3rd person agreement, as illustrated in (4). He also sketches a geographical diffusion pattern, whereby the centre of innovation is situated in the Cádiz province, which has more of the innovative 3PL features closer to the center (level 4) than those areas that are further away from it (levels 1 (furthest away, least advanced) to 3).

	Sg	Pl
Modern Peninsular Spanish		
T	*Tú*	*Vos-otros*
V	*Usted*	*Ustedes*
Modern Western Andalusian		
T	*Tú*	*Vos-otros*
		> Ustedes
V	*Usted*	*Ustedes*

(4)   *Ustedes sois hermanos.*
       'You(3PL) are(2PL) siblings'   (Lara Bermejo 2016b: 98)

As can be seen from Table 2, Lara Bermejo identifies a cline following which the *ustedes* phenomenon progresses from one syntactic context to another, whereby

---

[3] Examples quoted after Paardekooper (1996: 70).

Table 2: Extension of the innovative 3PL in the *ustedes* phenomenon (Lara Bermejo 2016a: 277)

	Stressed pronoun	Reflexive pronoun	Verbs	Accusative pronoun	Dative pronoun	Possessives
Stage 1	3pl	2pl	2pl	2pl	2pl	2pl
Stage 2	3pl	3pl	2pl	2pl	2pl	2pl
Stage 3	3pl	3pl	3pl	2pl	2pl	2pl
Stage 4	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl	2pl	2pl
Stage 5	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl	2pl
Stage 6	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl	3pl

stage 6 sees full completion of 3PL, which manifests itself in Canarian and Latin American Spanish.

In the present paper, we report on a pilot study on the historical development of the verbal agreement going with the incipient use of epistolary forms of address and emerging nominative *u* in a corpus of letters (*Letters as Loot* from the 17th and 18th c.; `www.brievenalsbuit.nl`), in order to determine how *u* could become a subject pronoun, and how the verbal agreement evolved with it. We argue that a very similar account to that proposed by Lara Bermejo (2016b) for the southern IR varieties is justified for the historical Dutch data as well.[4]

2   Pilot study

2.1   Method

We searched the *Letters as Loot* corpus for forms of the verbs *hebben* 'have', *zijn* 'be' and *zullen* 'shall' and a form of *U*, *UE*, or *UL*, both in straight and inverted word order. In order to obtain clear results regarding the verbal agreement, we removed all the plurals (e.g., *ue. zijn* 'you(r honourables) are') because they are synchretic in all three persons. We further restricted the search to the verbs *hebben*, *zijn* and *zullen* because they do not have syncretic 2SG/3SG forms, as other verbs do), as in (5). Morphologically *heeft/zal* is syncretic with 3SG, while *hebt/zult* is unambiguously 2SG, as shown in (6).

(5)   *jij loopt* vs. *hij loopt*

---

[4]We only focus on the verbal agreement, but note that there are indications that the possessive agreement may be worth looking at at a later stage, cf. example (9).

(6)   *jij hebt/bent/zult* (dialectal *gij hebt/zijt/zult*) vs. *hij heeft/is/zal*

As we obtained too few data for all separate regions in corpus, we focused on the three regions with most data, Zeeland, Noord- and Zuid-Holland, and recoded the rest as "other".

Diatopic and diachronic spread of 2SG verbal agreement with *U/UE/UL*							
	17th c.				18th c.		
region	2SG	3SG	total	%2SG	2SG	3SG	total	%2SG
Zeeland	7	6	13	53.8	4	4	8	50.0
Zuid-Holland	4	7	11	36.4	0	8	8	0.0
Noord-Holland	5	17	22	22.7	8	41	49	16.3
other	1	10	11	9.1	4	10	14	28.6

2.2   Factors influencing the variation in verbal agreement

We analysed the data using multiple logistic regression in Rbrul (Johnson 2009)[5], and found that **region** is the strongest predictor of verbal agreement with *UE / UL / U*, besides inversion (p = 0.0115). The model shows that Zeeland strongly favours 2SG agreement, while Zuid and Noord Holland prefer 3SG agreement. On the map, this results in a similar diffusion pattern to the one that Lara Bermejo (2015, 2016b) described for the agreement with *ustedes* in Western Andalusian dialects. It appears that the use of *u* with 3SG agreement was innovated in Holland and then diffused to Zeeland, where 2SG was initially more frequent, but is gradually replaced over time. Interestingly, this seems to suggest that in fact both theories regarding the origin of the nominative use of *u* may at least partially be right: on the one hand, *u* became used as a subject due to the (cross-linguistically common) shift from accusative to nominative, but initially kept the 2SG agreement. On the other hand, the 3SG agreement may still have arisen under the influence of the epistolary forms.

---

[5]Factor groups in the full model: region, period, gender, verb, inversion.

	verbal agreement with *U/UE/UL*		
Input prob.	0.102		
Total N	136		
log-likelihood	-63.605		
	factor weight	% (2SG)	N
region	p = 0.0115		
Zeeland	0.805	52.4	21
Zuid-Holland	0.341	21.1	19
Noord-Holland	0.390	18.3	71
other	0.423	20.0	25
inversion	p = 0.0443		
straight	0.723	26.2	122
inverted	0.277	7.1	14

There is a second factor in the regression model that is significant at the p<0.05-level, viz. **inversion**. 2SG agreement is significantly more frequent in subject-initial V2 ("straight" contexts), as evidenced by the factor weight closer to 1 (0.723), while 3SG agreement much more likely in inversion contexts, as in (7) (factor weight closer to 0, viz. 0.277). We will return to this in Section 2.3 below.

(7) *dat sulke gedagten sijn nog nooijt of sullen nooyt in myn opkomen daar voor*
     ***heeft Ue** myn te veel goeds gedaan*
     'that such thoughts have never and never shall cross my mind, you have(3SG) done too much good for me, for such a thing to happen.'
     (J.D. Piest to J.D. Praetorius, 1781/02/01)

The other factors (period, gender and verb) could not be shown to be significant.[6] However, **adjacency** between the verb and the form of address may possibly play a role, though we have not been able to test this yet, due to restrictions of the search interface. Early examples of nominative *U* (i.e., not *UL/UE*) may indicate an influence, with non-adjacency correlating with 3SG agreement. Observe that in (9), there is even a 3SG possessive pronoun (*zijn*), besides the 3SG verb agreement.

---

[6]We observed that *UL* is the form that most frequently occurs with 2SG verbal agreement, and that it is mostly used by women, but disappears after 1700. The addressee of the women's letters is typically the husband or another family member, so the fact that 2SG sticks here for longer may indicate that despite the introduction of a new pronoun, the informal 2SG agreement remains used in informal contexts. *UE* is by far the most dominant form, and is most frequently used with 3SG verbal agreement.

(8)   *want **u zult** hoope ik een wijf hebben voor mijne wederkompste*
        'For you shall(2SG), I hope, have a wife before my return.'
        (Maria van Reigersberch to Nicolaes van Reigersberch, 1624)

(9)   *Ik hoope **u zijn** geldt wel zonder verlies krigen **sal***
        'I hope that you shall(3SG) receive back your(3SG) money without loss.'
        (Maria van Reigersberch to Hugo de Groot, 1627)
        (data from van Leuvensteijn 2002)

2.3   Sketch of an analysis

In generative approaches, subject-verb agreement is analysed as a local dependency between a functional head, normally T (assigning nominative case to the subject), and the subject (checking T's ϕ-features). Typically, this dependency involves the subject moving to (or through) SpecTP. Assuming a symmetric view of V2, there is a second position for subjects in Dutch, viz. SpecCP.[7] This is where the subject is found in subject-initial V2-clauses, while it remains in SpecTP in inversion contexts. In such contexts, SpecCP may be filled by a topic (amongst others).

   In order to account for the variation in IR dialects, Lara Bermejo (2016b) argues that the replacement of *vosotros* by *ustedes* proceeds in three steps: (i) 3PL *ustedes* is merged as a topic (in SpecCP), doubled by the regular 2PL subject in SpecTP, (10); (ii) 3PL *ustedes* in SpecCP is doubled by a covert 2PL clitic in SpecTP, triggering 2PL agreement on the verb[8], (11); and finally, (iii) *ustedes* is reanalysed as a subject, and triggers 3PL agreement in SpecTP, (12).

(10)   *Ustedes(,) vosotros no la conocéis.*   (Lara Bermejo 2016b: 101)
        'You(3PL) you(2PL) do not know(2PL) her.'

(11)   *Ustedes ø sois hermanos.*   (Lara Bermejo 2016b: 98)
        'You(3PL) ø(2PL) are(2PL) siblings.'

(12)   *Ustedes me han pedido un crédito.*   (Lara Bermejo 2016b: 104)
        'You(3PL) have(3PL) asked me for a credit.'

---

[7]We assume a very simplified model here, with TP and CP serving as abbreviations for a possibly more fine-grained structure as would be assumed under a cartographic analysis.

[8]Lara Bermejo uses Uriagereka's (1995) "big DP" hypothesis for this, which Rubio Alcalá (2014) proposes to extend to account for clitic doubling, with the head of DP being filled by the clitic, and the complement by the topic.

We argue that this proposal in terms of doubling of a topic by a covert pronoun can be transferred to account for the variation in verbal agreement with subject *u* in historical Dutch, as well. Our quantitative analysis suggested that 3SG is gaining on 2SG agreement, and that 2SG agreement is preferred in straight V2-clauses. Under our adaptation of Lara Bermejo's proposal, 3SG *u* is a full pronoun (in the sense of Cardinaletti & Starke) used as a topic in SpecCP in straight V2-clauses, and the 2SG agreement with the verb is mediated by a null pronoun in SpecTP (13).

(13) $[_{CP}u[3SG] [_{C'}[_{C}zult_i[2SG]] [_{TP}ø[2SG] [_{VP}$*een wijf hebben* $] [_{T[2SG]}t_i]]$

The assumption of a null doubling pronoun in this position is justified by the ample occurrence of overt pronouns in exactly this position, doubling a pronoun in SpecCP in (Southern) Dutch dialects, like *gie* in (14).[9]

(14)   *Ge kent **gie** da.*   (Haegeman & Van de Velde 2008: 163)
        'You(2SG/Pl) know you(2SG) that.'

In inversion contexts, *u* appears in SpecTP, and triggers 3SG agreement on the verb, (15).

(15) $[_{CP}daarvoor [_{C'}[_{C}heeft_i[3SG]] [_{TP}Ue[3SG] [_{VP}$*myn te veel goeds gedaan* $]$
        $[_{T[3SG]}t_i]]$

Over time, the null pronoun in SpecTP (13) was lost, and *u* was reanalysed as a subject, with a trace in SpecTP in straight V2. 3SG agreement spread to some extent, helped along by the syncretism between 2SG and 3SG agreement found in most verbs. It is possible that the fact that epistolary forms of address when spelled out should trigger 3SG agreement, added to this.

(16) $[_{CP}u_j[3SG] [_{C'}[_{C}zal_i[3SG]] [_{TP}t_j[3SG] [_{VP}$*een wijf hebben* $] [_{T[3SG]}t_i]]$

This proposal leads us to expect that embedded clauses, too, should show significantly more 3SG agreement in sentences with subject *u* in 17th and 18th c. Dutch. This hypothesis is corroborated by the diffusion of agreement patterns with *ustedes* in the southern IR varieties, where third person agreement is found in embedded before main clauses (Lara Bermejo 2016a: 266-7). We leave this for fu-

---

[9]This example is from the West Flemish dialect of Lapscheure, which has been extensively described and analysed by Liliane. Particularly the doubling of subject pronouns is one of her long-standing research interests.

ture research. The fact that the variation between 2SG and 3SG agreement has stabilised in the present-day language seems to reflect a certain degree of lexicalisation: 2SG with *zijn*, (preferred) 3SG with *hebben*, for instance.

Dedication

With this contribution, we would like to thank Liliane for everything she has done for both of us, and keeps doing, for her generosity, always open door, and open ears throughout the years, for being a wonderful colleague, a mentor, a second mother, and a friend. Besides, she is one of the reasons there is an atmosphere within our research group ΔiaLing that encourages fruitful collaborations such as this one, across language and framework boundaries.

References

Haegeman, L. & Van de Velde, D. 2008. Pleonastic *tet* in the Lapscheure dialect. *Catalan Journal of Linguistics* 7. 157–199.

Vor der Hake, J.A. 1911. Is de beleefdheidsvorm *U* 'n verbastering van *UEd.*? *De Nieuwe Taalgids* 5. 16–24.

Heeroma, K. 1934. De beleefdheidsvorm *u* omstreeks 1800. *De Nieuwe Taalgids* 28. 328–332.

Van der Horst, J.M. 2008. *Geschiedenis van de Nederlandse syntaxis. Part 2*. Leuven: Universitaire Pers Leuven.

Johnson, D.E. 2009. Getting off the GoldVarb Standard: Introducing Rbrul for Mixed-Effects Variable Rule Analysis. *Language and Linguistics Compass* 3. 359–383.

Kern, J.H. 1911. Is de beleefdheidsvorm *U* 'n verbastering van *U.E.*? *De Nieuwe Taalgids* 5. 121–133.

Lara Bermejo, V. 2015. *Los tratamientos de 2Pl en Andalucía occidental y Portugal: Estudio geo- y sociolingüístico de un proceso de gramaticalización*: Universidad Autónoma de Madrid dissertation.

Lara Bermejo, V. 2016a. Spontaneous dubbing as a tool for eliciting linguistic data: The case of second person plural inflections in Andalusian Spanish. In M.H. Côté, R. Knooihuizen & J. Nerbonne (eds.), *The future of dialects: Selected papers from Methods in Dialectology XV*. 261–281. Berlin: Language Science Press.

Lara Bermejo, V. 2016b. When agreement is for covert but not for overt: The case of *ustedes* plus second person plural inflections in Peninsular Spanish. *Isogloss* 2. 95–111.

van Leuvensteijn, A. 2002. Epistolaire aanspreekvormen in de correspondentie van Maria van Reigersberch. *Tijdschrift voor Nederlandse Taal- en Letterkunde* 118. 288–298.

Paardekooper, P.C. 1996. *U* (ond.) ook voor 1600. *Taal en Tongval* 48. 70–71.

Simon, H. 2003. *Für eine grammatische Kategorie 'Respekt' im Deutschen. Synchronie, Diachronie und Typologie der deutschen Anredepronomina*. Tübingen: Niemeyer.

Vermaas, J.A.M. 2005. *Veranderingen in de Nederlandse aanspreekvormen van de dertiende t/m de twintigste eeuw*. Utrecht: LOT.

The Haegeman test:
A′-movement in the middle field

Hans Broekhuis

1 The test

As Liliane's linguistic work is wide-ranging and of a uniformly high quality, I imagine that most linguists acquainted with it (and it is hard to conjure up any serious syntactician who has not read at least some of her publications) would find picking out a specific page from her work as their favorite an impossible task. However, I have one such page: page 179 of *The Syntax of Negation* (1995). This page shows that Dutch is just like West Flemish in that it has obligatory movement of negative phrases expressing clausal negation into the specifier of a NegP located in the middle field of the clause. Establishing movement within the middle field of the clause is often extremely difficult, as it can be and often is applied in a string-vacuous fashion; the two structures in (1), for instance, differ in the structural position of the noun phrase *niemand* 'nobody' but will nevertheless give rise to the same linear order because there is no phonetically realized material in between the two positions.

(1)   a.   dat Jan [$_{NegP}$ [$_{Neg}$ ø] [$_{VP}$ niemand ziet]].
      b.   dat Jan [$_{NegP}$ niemand$_i$ [$_{Neg}$ ø] [$_{VP}$ t$_i$ ziet]].
           that Jan   nobody   sees
           'that Jan doesn't see anyone.'

Liliane demonstrates in a very simple and elegant way that movement of the negative phrase is obligatory by means of what I have come to think of as *The Haegeman test*: when we embed a negative phrase in the PP-complement of a predicative AP, leftward extraction of the PP *op niemand* can be shown to be obligatory because the PP must precede the adjective. The fact that the PP must also precede the modifier *erg* 'very', which can be taken to be located in a high

position within the AP, supports the claim that the PP must in fact be extracted from the AP (2b); cf. *Jan is [$_{AP}$ *erg op niemand dol]*.

(2) a. dat Jan [$_{NegP}$ [$_{Neg}$ ø] [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg dol [$_{PP}$ op niemand]] is]].
     b. dat Jan [$_{NegP}$ [$_{PP}$ op niemand]$_i$ [$_{Neg}$ ø] [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg dol t$_i$] is]].
         that Jan   of nobody   very fond   is
         'that Jan isn't very fond of anybody.'

The Haegeman test is crucial for determining the internal structure of the middle field of the clause, as well as the types of A′-movement available in this domain of the clause in the Germanic OV-languages. In other words, the test may help us determining the values available for X in structure (3) besides "Neg".

(3)   Clause-initial position   Postverbal field

        [$_{CP}$ ..... C [$_{TP}$ ..... T [$_{XP}$ ..... X [$_{VP}$ ..... V ....]]]]

        Verb second &   Middle field   Clause-final
        complementizer   verb position
        position

The Haegeman test has proved of great value in the *Syntax of Dutch*: the discussion in Broekhuis & Corver (2016: §13.3) on A′-scrambling in the middle field of the clause could probably not have been written without it. The examples in (4) first show that Dutch has focus/topic movement within the middle field of the clause. Note that the use of italics indicates the so-called A-accent assigned to contrastive foci and the use of italics with underlining indicates the B-accent assigned to contrastive topics; see Neeleman & Van de Koot (2008), Broekhuis & Corver (2016: §13.3.2), and references cited there for detailed discussions of these notions.

(4) a. dat Marie [$_{FocP}$ [op *PETER*]$_i$ Foc [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg dol t$_i$] is]].
         that Marie   of Peter   very fond   is
         'that Marie is very fond of Peter.'
     b. Ik weet niet wat   Marie van Jan vindt,   maar ik weet wel dat
         I know not what Marie of   Jan considers, but   I   know AFF that
         ze   [$_{TopP}$ [op *Peter*]$_i$ Top [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg dol t$_i$] is]].
         she   of Peter   very fond   is
         'I don't know how Marie feels about Jan but I do know she's very fond

61

of Peter.'

It is sometimes argued that focus movement differs from Neg-movement in that it is not obligatory because leaving the PP in its AP-internal position is possible if Peter is contrastively stressed: *dat Marie erg dol op PETER is*; see Neeleman & Van de Koot (2008) and references cited there. There is, however, also evidence that the specifier position of FocP must be filled, based on the distribution of focus particles such as *zelfs* 'even'. But first consider the examples in (5); (6b) shows that such particles may be left-adjacent to the focused phrase and (5b) shows that the particle and PP must be analyzed as a constituent because otherwise this example would violate the verb-second requirement on main clauses.

(5) a. dat Marie [$_{FocP}$ [zelfs op *PETER*]$_i$ Foc [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg dol   t$_i$] is]].
         that Marie   even of Peter   very fond   is
         'that Marie is even very fond of Peter.'
     b. [Zelfs op *PETER*]$_i$ is Marie [$_{AP}$ erg   dol   t$_i$].
         even of Peter   is Marie   very fond
         'Marie is even very fond of Peter'

The crucial fact is that while the focused *phrase* may occur within its original AP-internal position, the focus *particle* must be located in the specifier of FocP: see Broekhuis & Corver (2016: §13.3.2 sub IC2)) for a discussion of the question as to whether the focus particle is base-generated as part of the PP and moved into SpecFocP by focus movement, or whether it is inserted in SpecFocP directly by the merge operation; see Barbiers (2014) for independent arguments showing that focus particles of the *zelfs* type can occupy SpecFocP.

(6) a. *dat Marie [$_{FocP}$ _ Foc [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg   dol   [zelfs op *PETER*]$_i$] is]].
         that Marie   very fond even of Peter   is
     b. dat Marie [$_{FocP}$ zelfs Foc [$_{VP}$ [$_{AP}$ erg   dol   [op *PETER*]$_i$] is]].
         that Marie   even   very fond of Peter   is
         'that Marie is even very fond of Peter.'

The acceptability contrast in (6) suggests that some form of focus movement is obligatory or, at least, that the specifier of FocP must be filled by some focus element. This of course raises the question why examples such as *dat Marie erg dol op PETER is* are acceptable as well. The answer may be that such examples do not have an active FocP and thus should receive a different interpretation than examples with focus movement; I hope to return to this question in future work.

2 Intermezzo on the cartographic approach

Before continuing with the discussion of the Haegeman test, let me allow myself a brief cross-linguistic digression. Example (7a) shows that although English does not have focus movement of the kind found in Dutch, it does have a "low" FocP, the specifier of which can be filled by a focus particle: (7a) is unacceptable with a neutral intonation pattern (that is, without backgrounding or afterthought intonation). This is expected given that (7b) shows that the same also holds for Neg-movement; see Broekhuis & Klooster (2010) for relevant discussion. The examples in (6) and (7) therefore suggest that the availability of a "low" FocP is not a language-specific property of the continental Germanic OV-languages but a more general one.

(7) a. that Mary is **even** very fond of *PETER*.
     a′. *that Mary is very fond **even** of *PETER*.
     b. that Marie is **not** very fond of anybody.

It is also worth pointing out that Broekhuis & Corver (2016: §13.3.2, sub IA1) provide evidence that the Dutch FocP is located in between the modal adverbs and NegP and that TopP is located higher than (that is: precedes) the modal adverbs (which goes against Neeleman & Van de Koot (2008), who deny the existence of such designated focus/topic positions). This would indicate that the Dutch middle field is structured in a similar way as the Hungarian preverbal field (cf. É. Kiss 2002). The fact that these genetically unrelated languages have the same linear order *contrastive topic* > *contrastive focus* > *negation* of course supports the cartographic approach to syntax, which has been one of Liliane's main research interests over the last two decades.

3 The test as a linguistic tool

The Haegeman test is not only a crucial tool for establishing A′-movement in the middle field of the clause but can also offer invaluable help in evaluating analyses that avail themselves of such movements. A good example is the analysis of so-called correlative coordinators such as *zowel … als …* 'both … and …', and *of … of …* 'either … or…'. The traditional analysis of such sequences is that we are dealing here with complex coordinators. Larson (1985), for instance, has proposed that *either … or …* originates as a single lexical head (Co) and that either is moved into some position preceding the first coordinand later in the

derivation, as illustrated in (8a). A useful piece of evidence in favor of Larson's account is that we can now also derive examples such as (8b) by assuming that either may also target positions external to the coordinate structure.

(8) a. that John ate [either$_i$ [$_{CoP}$ rice [$_{Co'}$ [$_{Co}$ t$_i$ or] beans]]].
     b. that John [either$_i$ [$_{VP}$ ate [$_{CoP}$ rice [$_{Co'}$ [$_{Co}$ t$_i$ or] beans]]]].

It should be noted, however, that this argument does not immediately carry over to OV-languages such as Dutch because the verb follows the coordinate structure in examples such as (9), so that the presumed head movement in (9b) would apply string vacuously; the two structures therefore give rise to the same linear order (although Broekhuis & Corver, in prep., discuss a number of more complex Dutch examples illustrating the same thing). Note in passing that I assume that all Dutch correlative coordinate structures have the same underlying structure, an assumption that may not be true for English *both ... and ...* for reasons (related to the fact that it differs from Dutch *zowel ... als ...* in that it triggers plural subject agreement) that I cannot discuss here.

(9) a. dat Jan [zowel$_i$ [$_{CoP}$ rijst [$_{Co'}$ [$_{Co}$ t$_i$ als] bonen]]] at.
         that Jan both   rice   and beans   ate
     b. dat Jan [zowel$_i$ [$_{VP}$ [$_{CoP}$ rijst [$_{Co'}$ [$_{Co}$ t$_i$ als] bonen]]] at].
         that Jan both   rice   and beans   ate

Larson's complex-head analysis of correlatives is fraught with problems for various reasons: one important problem (not mentioned in the literature as far as I know) is that the structures in (8) and (9) violate the lexical integrity hypothesis, which prohibits movement of a subpart of a lexical item: see Schwarz (1999) for a discussion of various other problems. An alternative approach to correlative coordinators is provided in Hendriks (2001, 2004) and Johannessen (2005), who argue that the initial part of a correlative coordinate structure is a focus particle. One argument in favor of this proposal is that the initial part of the correlative coordinate structure must have an emphatically accented phrase in its domain.

(10) a. Peter heeft zelfs *JAN* ontmoet.
          Peter has   even Jan met
      b. Peter heeft zowel *JAN* als *ELS* ontmoet.
          Peter has   both Jan and Els met

Another argument in favor of this proposal is that it immediately accounts for

Neijt's (1979) generalization that the coordinands in a correlative coordinate structure are normally major phrases (clausal constituents and certain verbal projections).

(11)   a.   [Zelfs de mannen] waren aanwezig.
                even the men   were present
        a′. *[De zelfs mannen] waren aanwezig.
                the even men   were present
        b.   [Zowel [de mannen als de vrouwen]] waren aanwezig.
                both   the men   and the women   were present
        b′. *[De zowel [mannen als vrouwen]] waren aanwezig.
                the both   men   and women   were present

If correlative coordinate structures are indeed contrastively focused constituents, our earlier conclusion that the specifier position of FocP cannot remain empty predicts that either the full correlative coordinate structure or its initial element must be placed in SpecFocP. The Haegeman test shows that this prediction is indeed correct.

(12)   a.   *Jan is [boos [zowel op Jan als op Marie]] geweest.
                Jan is angry both   at Jan and at Marie been
        b.   Jan is [zowel op Jan als op Marie]$_i$ [boos t$_i$] geweest.
                Jan is both   at Jan and at Marie angry   been
                'Jan has been angry both at Jan and at Marie.'
        c.   Jan is zowel [boos [op Jan als op Marie]] geweest.
                Jan is both   angry at   Jan and at Marie been
                'Jan has been angry both at Jan and at Marie.'

That the initial elements of correlative coordinate structures are focus particles can also be motivated by examples such as (13b), taken from Hoeksema (1989), in which a clausal correlative coordinate structure follows a clause-final verb (cluster); the acceptability contrast between the two competing word orders in (13b) is similar to that found in the competing word orders in the run-of-the-mill focus construction in (13a).

(13)   a.   Jan heeft <alleen> gezegd <*alleen> dat Marie komt.
                Jan has   only   said   that Marie comes
                'Jan has only said that Marie is coming.'

b. Jan heeft <zowel> gezegd <*zowel> dat Marie komt   als dat
Jan has   both   said   that Marie comes and that
Els komt.
Els comes
'Jan has both said that Marie is coming and that Els is coming.'

The examples in (14) also bear out that the same can be observed in the case of prepositional correlative coordinate structures (provided we do not use a backgrounding or afterthought intonation).

(14)   a.   Jan heeft <alleen> gewacht <*alleen> op vader.
              Jan has   only   waited   for father
              'Jan has only waited for father.'
        b.   Jan heeft <zowel> gewacht <*zowel> op vader als op
              Jan has   both   waited   for father and for
              moeder.
              mother
              'Jan waited both for father and for mother.'

As a bonus, observe that example (15) shows that it is also possible to split the presumed correlative coordinate structure, which suggests that we are not dealing with coordination of clausal constituents at all; see Broekhuis & Corver (in prep.) for more discussion.

(15)   Jan heeft zowel op vader gewacht als   op moeder.
        Jan has   both   for father waited   and for mother
        'Jan waited both for father and for mother.'

The examples in (13) and (14) show that the Haegeman test is in fact applicable to all structures in which some element has to cross over another element with a fixed position in the clausal structure in order to reach some designated landing site. I am convinced that its scope will be expanded in future linguistic work and will ultimately become one of the standard devices in the linguistic tool kit.

References

Barbiers, S. 2014. Syntactic doubling and deletion as a source of variation. In M.C. Picallo (ed.), *Linguistic variation in the minimalist framework*. 197–223. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Broekhuis, H. & Corver, N. 2016. *Syntax of Dutch. Verbs and verb phrases, volume 3*. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press.

Broekhuis, H. & Corver, N. in prep. *Syntax of Dutch. Coordination*. Amsterdam: Meertens Institute.

Broekhuis, H. & Klooster, W. 2010. Merge and Move as costly operations. *Revista Virtual de Estudos da Linguagem (special issue on Optimality Theoretic Syntax)* 8(4). 155–182.

Haegeman, L. 1995. *The syntax of negation*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Hendriks, P. 2001. Either *as a focus particle*. Groningen: University of Groningen Artifical Intelligence Prepublications.

Hendriks, P. 2004. *Either*, *both* and *neither* in coordinate structures. In A. ter Meulen & W. Abraham (eds.), *The composition of meaning: From lexeme to discourse*. 115–138. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Hoeksema, J. 1989. Only in Dutch: A comparison of three adverbs. *Penn Review of Linguistics* 13. 106–121.

Johannessen, J.B. 2005. The syntax of correlative adverbs. *Lingua* 115. 419–443.

Larson, R.K. 1985. On the syntax of disjunction scope. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 3. 218–264.

Neeleman, A. & Van de Koot, H. 2008. Dutch scrambling and the nature of discourse templates. *The Journal of Comparative Germanic Linguistics* 11. 137–189.

Neijt, A. 1979. *Gapping. A contribution to sentence grammar*: Utrecht University dissertation.

The Root where it should not be
On internal argument drop sentences in Italian*

Carlo Cecchetto

Early on in the generative literature some phenomena that were considered to be limited to root clauses have been identified (cf. Emonds 1969 and Hooper & Thompson 1973). As Aelbrecht et al. (2012) note in their assessment of this literature, phenomena that have been traditionally analyzed as occurring only in main clauses come in at least two varieties: those that are root phenomena in a strict sense and those for which the characterization as root phenomena might be questioned. For example, a phenomenon that was initially treated as restricted to the root is argument fronting in English, based on contrasts like the one in (1)–(2):

(1)   This book you should read.

(2)   *It is impossible that this book he has read.

However, as already noted in the early literature cited above, argument fronting is possible also in clausal complement of verbs of *saying*. Although these cases might not be strong counterexamples since clausal complement of verbs of *saying* might be sufficiently "root-like"; subsequent work by Liliane Haegeman (cf. Haegeman 2012 for a systematic presentation) has shown that argument fronting is possible also in certain types of adverbial clauses, those which Haegeman calls peripheral adverbials (cf. Haegeman 2003). An example is (3).

---

(3)   While YOUR *book* they are using in two courses, mine they haven't even
       order for the library.   (Haegeman 2003: 332)

For "root phenomena" like argument fronting, Haegeman developed an account
based on intervention which does not make a crucial use of the distinction be-
tween root and non-root clauses. This seems a welcome fact given that these
phenomena do not occur only at the root, despite the initial characterization in
this direction.

   However, there *are* genuine root phenomena. A well-known case is V2 in
Dutch and German. Less well-known cases include hanging topics in Italian (cf.
Cinque 1977) and right dislocation in "strict OV languages" like Japanese and
Turkish (cf. Cecchetto & Donati 2015 for an account that unifies these three phe-
nomena and tries to explain why they are restricted to main clauses). My limited
goal in this squib is to discuss a new case of root phenomenon in Italian that, as
far as I know, has not been previously systematically studied. This can be illus-
trated by the question-answer pair in (4):

(4)   E   il   ragazzo? Partito
       And the boy?   Left
       'What about the boy?' 'He left.'

The answer in (4) is interpreted as a declarative tensed clause although it is very
reduced, the only overt element being the past participle *partito*. Neither the
auxiliary nor the only argument of the verb are overtly expressed. For concrete-
ness, I will use the label "internal argument drop sentences" to refer to the con-
struction exemplified in (4), but I want to stress that in addition to the internal
argument the auxiliary is dropped as well. The choice of the label is motivated
by the fact that the construction is attested only with internal arguments. This
is confirmed by sentences (5) to (7). (5), which contains a passive, is fully accept-
able, much like (4), which contains an unaccusative verb. However, (6), which
contains an unergative verb, and (7), which contains a transitive verb, are sharply
ungrammatical.

(5)   E   il   dessert? Mangiato (da Leo)
       And the dessert? Eaten   (by Leo)
       'What about the dessert?' 'Leo ate it.'

(6)   E   il   ragazzo? *Pianto
       And the boy?   Cried

(7)　E　il　ragazzo? *Mangiato la　torta
　　　And the boy?　　　Eaten　　the cake

In Italian, the past participle agrees in gender and number with the internal argument of passive and unaccusative verbs. This extends to internal argument drop sentences, where agreement is with contextually given internal argument. While in (4) and (5) the make-up of the past participle is compatible with its default value (singular, masculine), (8) and (9) show that the past participle is inflected in gender and number.

(8)　E　le　torte?　　　　　Mangiate　　　(da Leo)
　　　And the cake-PLUR-FEM? Eaten-PLUR-FEM (by Leo)
　　　'What about the cakes'. 'Leo ate them.'

(9)　E　le　ragazze?　　　　Partite
　　　And the girls-PLUR-FEM? Left-PLUR-FEM
　　　'What about the girls?' 'They left.'

Internal argument drop sentences are not restricted to question-answer pairs, as long as the dropped argument is contextually salient. For example, imagine a context in which I enter my office and I notice that the desk next to mine has been fully emptied. A colleague might react to my puzzled look by uttering (10).

(10)　Licenziata　　　dal capo.
　　　Fired-SING-FEM by　the　boss
　　　'She has been fired by the boss'

Internal argument drop is not allowed in a declarative with a fully-fledged verb, as shown in (11). For internal argument drop to be possible, the verb must be a past participle.

(11)　*E　quel film?　vedrò　　　(domani)
　　　　And that movie? (I) will-watch (tomorrow)

It should be clear that the internal argument drop construction is not a simple case of ellipsis to be analyzed only at the discourse level but obeys very specific syntactic constraints and thus require a syntactic analysis. In fact, the constraints on the internal argument drop construction are reminiscent of those governing another reduced construction in Italian, namely the one called absolute small clause by Belletti (1990). An absolute small clause is an adjunct clause composed by a past participle which agrees with an internal argument DP, which can remain

unexpressed:

(12) Partite   (le ragazze),   restammo   soli
      Left-PLUR-FEM (the girls-PLUR-FEM) remain-PAST-1-PLUR alone
      'After the girls left, we remained alone.'

(13) Mangiata   la torta,   facemmo   una passeggiata
      Eaten-FEM-SING the cake-FEM-SING make-PAST-1-PLUR a   walk
      'Having eaten the cake, we took a walk.'

An obvious analogy between absolute small clauses and the internal argument drop construction is that they are both restricted to past participles that combine with an internal argument (also absolute small clauses are restricted to passive and unaccusative verbs). But the analogies do not stop here. As Belletti (1990) discusses, negation is not allowed in absolute small clauses (cf. (14)). (15) shows that the same holds for the internal argument drop construction.

(14) *Non mangiata   la torta,   facemmo   una
      NEG eaten-FEM-SING the cake-FEM-SING make-PAST-1-PLUR a
      passeggiata
      walk

(15) E le ragazze?   *Non partite[1]
      And the girls-PLUR-FEM?   NEG Left-PLUR-FEM

Belletti (1990) also notices that, although *ne*-extraction is possible from the internal argument of a transitive verb (cf. (16)), *ne*-extraction is not possible in absolute small clauses (cf. (17)). The same holds for internal argument drop sentences (cf. (18)).

---

[1]There is just one context that licenses a negated past participle in isolation and this is enumeration in a list. For example, in the old days of the Italian weather broadcasting a list of cities would be read and the minimum/maximum temperature registered in each city the previous day would be given. In those radio broadcastings, the frozen expression *non pervenuta* ('not arrived') was used, as shown in (i):

(i) Bari   20-28
     Bolzano   non pervenuta
     Milano   18-28
     Roma   20-30
     Etc.

(16) (Di quei film)   ne ho   visti   tre.
      (Of those movies) *ne* (I) have seen-MASC-PLUR three
      'I saw three of those movies.'

(17) *Vistine   tre, mi stancai.
      Seen-MASC-PLUR-*ne* three I got tired

(18) *E   quei film?   *Vistine   tre.
      And those movies?   Seen-MASC-PLUR-*ne* three

Despite these analogies, there is a striking difference between absolute small clauses and internal argument drop sentences: absolute small clauses, being adverbial clauses, need to be embedded, while the internal argument drop construction can never be embedded. We can check this by trying to embed it under a verb of saying. The result is ungrammatical (cf. (19))

(19) E   quel film?   *Ha detto che già   visto.
      And that movie?   (he) said that already seen

The same ungrammaticality is observed when the internal argument drop construction is embedded in a peripheral adverbial clause (i.e., the structures that Haegeman has shown to allow argument fronting). This is shown in (20) and (21). (21) is a telling case, as it contains a premise conditional, which is prototypical example of peripheral adverbials.

(20) Vieni   a vedere quel film?   *No, perché già   visto.
      (you) come to see   that movie?   No, because already seen

(21) E   quella torta? *Se vuoi   assaggiare, c'è   una pasticceria
      And that   cake?   If (you) want to-taste   there is a   bakery
      sotto casa.
      under house

We can conclude that internal argument drop is rigidly a root phenomenon. An even more striking observation is that internal argument drop sentences, despite being very reduced (in fact, they typically contain only a past participle) have a full force specification. They can be declaratives as in the example discussed up to now, but they can also be interrogatives (cf. (22)) or exclamatives (cf. (23)).

(22) Licenziato?
      Fired-SING-MASC

'Has he been fired?'
Context: Leo enters his office, notices that the desk next to his has been fully emptied and utters (22) to elicit information from a colleague.

(23)   Bruciata!
         Burned-SING-FEM
         Context: Leo arrives next to the Opera House, notices that it has been destroyed by a fire and utters (23) to express his surprise/ disappointment.

Internal argument drop sentences raise several interesting questions. One is the nature of the dropped argument. A possibility is that it is *pro*, somewhat licensed by the agreement morpheme on the past participle (cf. Rizzi 1986). A more complex issue is the following. On the one hand, internal argument drop sentences share many properties with small clauses: they cannot contain an external argument, they are not compatible with a full verbal morphology (either in the form of an auxiliary or in the form of a finite verb) and they cannot be negated. In structural terms, this seems to suggest that they are reduced structures, possibly smaller than *v*P (assuming that Spec,*v*P is where the external theta role assigned, cf. Chomsky 1995 and Kratzer 1996). On the other hand, internal argument drop sentences have a full force specification and the projection ForceP is taken to be the highest projection in the CP area (cf. Rizzi 1997 and much following work).

Confronted with this puzzle there are at least two ways to go. Either we assume that ForceP can be projected in the lower segment of the structure, say in the VP periphery. Or we can assume that the intermediate projections between VP and ForceP can be deactivated. It is not even clear that these two proposals are not notational variants of each other, since they both boil down to saying that an extended middle portion of the structure can be absent under certain conditions.

But the real issue is explaining why this middle portion can be missing in internal argument drop sentences and (apparently) only in them. Although I am not in the position to answer this question, I hope to have shown that internal argument drop sentences are challenging enough to deserve a serious investigation.

References

Aelbrecht, L., Haegeman, L. & Nye, R. 2012. Main clause phenomena and the privilege of the root. In L. Albrecht, L. Haegeman & R. Nye (eds.), *Main clause phenomena: New horizons*, vol. 190 Linguistik Aktuell/Linguistics Today. 1–19. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Belletti, A. 1990. *Generalized verb movement. Aspects of verb syntax*. Turin: Rosenberg and Sellier.

Cecchetto, C. & Donati, C. 2015. *(Re)labeling*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Chomsky, N. 1995. *The minimalist program*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Cinque, G. 1977. The movement nature of left dislocation. *Linguistic Inquiry* 8. 397–412.

Emonds, J. 1969. *Root and structure preserving transformations*: MIT dissertation.

Haegeman, L. 2003. Conditional clauses: External and internal syntax. *Mind and Language* 18. 317–339.

Haegeman, L. 2012. *Adverbial clauses, main clause phenomena, and composition of the left periphery, The cartography of syntactic structures 8* Oxford Studies in Comparative Syntax. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hooper, J.B. & Thompson, S.A. 1973. On the applicability of root transformations. *Linguistic Inquiry* 4. 465–497.

Kratzer, A. 1996. Severing the external argument from its verb. In J. Rooryck & L. Zaring (eds.), *Phrase structure and the lexicon*. 109–137. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Rizzi, L. 1986. Null objects in italian and the theory of *pro*. *Linguistic Inquiry* 17. 501–557.

Rizzi, L. 1997. The fine structure of the left periphery. In L. Haegeman (ed.), *Elements of grammar: Handbook in generative syntax*. 281–337. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

A Note on Relative Clauses with Split Antecedents*

Guglielmo Cinque

Since Perlmutter & Ross (1970), relatives with split antecedents have represented an analytical problem for any theory of relative clauses. Two cases should in fact be distinguished; one in which the split antecedents occur in two (or more) co-ordinated sentences, characteristically bearing the same grammatical function (subject, object, etc.) (see section 1) and one in which they bear different grammatical functions in one and the same sentence (see section 2).

1 Split antecedents in coordinate sentences[1]

The examples in (1) illustrate the case of split antecedents in two coordinated sentences:[2]

---

*To Liliane with sympathy and admiration.

[1]This construction must be kept distinct from the construction with coordinated antecedents which has come to be known as the hydra construction Link (1984). The reason is that languages with pre-nominal relatives have the latter but not the former

[2]Note that (1)b., e., f. and g. have split antecedents in the object rather than in the subject position of the coordinate sentences (pace Rochemont & Culicover 1990: 38f). More difficult seem cases where the split antecedents in the coordinated sentences have different grammatical functions. Baltin (2005: 255) gives an example like (i) as ungrammatical:

(i)   *A man entered the room and I saw a woman who were similar

Also see Moltmann (1992). Yet, as noted in Smits (1989), for some Italians the split antecedents of a nonrestrictive relative need not have the same grammatical function. In fact I tend to accept a sentence like (ii).

(ii)   Alla fermata è arrivato un uomo ed io ho visto anche un ragazzo, i quali si assomigliavano molto
        'At the bus stop a man arrived and I saw a boy too, who looked very much alike.'

(1) a. A man$_i$ entered the room and a woman$_j$ went out who$_{i,j}$ were quite similar. (Perlmutter & Ross 1970: 350)

   b. Every villager envies a relative of his and every townsman admires a friend of his who hate each other (Hintikka 1974: 172)

   c. The girl left and the boy arrived who met in Chicago (Chomsky 1975: fn.47)[3]

   d. It is obvious that a man came in and a woman went out who were similar (Andrews 1975: 119)

   e. John saw a man and Mary saw a woman [who were wanted by the police] (Alexiadou et al. 2000: 14)

   f. Kim likes muffins, but Sandy prefers scones, which they eat with jam (Arnold 2004: 274)

   g. John noticed a man and Mary spotted a woman [who the police were looking for –] (Radford 2017: §5.2)

Our tentative interpretation of such cases is that they are possibly to be as-similated to those RCs that (marginally) receive a restrictive interpretation even though they enter a discourse grammar nonrestrictive structure like the restric-tives with heavy pied piping in English (as in examples like every candidate the father of whom Bill voted for —Jacobson 1998: 81) or the restrictives employ-ing the art. + *qual-* paradigm in Italian (*I soci i quali non abbiano ancora versato la quota annuale..* 'The members who have not paid the annual fees.. '— Cinque 1982: 264); constructions not derived by raising, in which the wh-pronoun is in-terpreted similarly to a pronoun or demonstrative.[4] For additional discussion of the discourse grammar non-restrictive construction, also arguably used for the special restrictive construction examined here, see Cinque (2008, to appear).

This interpretation may be supported by the following three facts. First, re-placement in English of a wh-relative pronoun with that (which is otherwise un-

---

Chaves (2012: §3.4.3) notes that conjunction, but not disjunction, gives acceptable sentences:

(iii) *A man entered or a woman left who were quite similar.

[3]Chomsky (1975: 98) actually says "To me these examples seem at best quite marginal, and I would question whether anything can be based on them." (fn.47). In fact not all languages appear to allow for them. See Cardoso (2010: 191f) on European Portuguese.

[4]Recalling the analysis of split antecedents of nonrestrictive relatives in Demirdache (1991: 116). Also see Yoshitaka Erlewine & Kotek (2015) and Webelhuth et al. (2013: 47), where such cases as (1a) are suggested to be similar to *A man$_i$ entered the room and a woman$_k$ went out. They$_{i+k}$ were quite similar.*

exceptionable with embedded and extraposed restrictives and marginal to impossible with nonrestrictives) leads for at least some speakers to much less acceptable sentences. Megan Rae (p.c.) finds (1)a with that replacing who much worse (see (2a), with her judgment), and Arnold (2004: 30) marks the variant with that in (2b) as unacceptable:

(2)　　a. ?*A man$_i$ entered the room and a woman$_j$ went out that$_{i,j}$ were quite similar.
　　　　b. Kim likes muffins$_i$, but Sandy prefers scones$_j$, which$_{i+j}$/*that$_{i+j}$ they eat with jam.

Second, an example like (3) in Italian is to my ear marginally possible even though it apparently violates the Right Roof Constraint:

(3)　　?[Che [qualcuno$_i$ ci abbia aiutato] e [un'altro$_j$ si sia aggiunto] è una fortuna] senza i quali$_{i,j}$ tutto questo non sarebbe stato possibile.
　　　　'That someone$_i$i helped us and someone else$_j$ joined in was a stroke of luck without whom$_{i+j}$ this would not have been possible.'

Third, as noted in Del Gobbo (2010: 406f, 2015: §2.2, 2017: §2.2) and Lin & Tsai (2015: 105f) split-antecedent RCs parallel to (1) above appear not to be possible in Chinese, even in nonrestrictive RCs, which are of the integrated type. This may well be a general property of languages with pre-nominal RCs, which, as seen, do not dispose of non-integrated nonrestrictives (Jaklin Kornfilt, p.c., informs me that examples like (1) above are indeed impossible also in Turkish prenominal RCs, although examples of coordinated antecedents (hydras) are perfectly grammatical).

　　For further discussion and different analyses of these split antecedent cases in terms of movement see de Vries (2002: 66ff and Chapter 7,§5.2.12), Zhang (2007, 2010), Cecchetto & Donati (2015: §3.3.5), Overfelt (2015: §6.2)[5] and Fox & Johnson (2016). Despite these attempts, it does not seems unreasonable to conclude, with Alexiadou et al. (2000: 14), that "[w]hile it is feasible for an RC to be linked to multiple antecedents by a rule of construal, as in the standard

---

[5]Overfelt notes that examples like (i) below suggest, contrary to these expectations, that a negative polarity item can be licensed in the extraposed material even given split antecedence:

(i)　　[$_{DP}$ Every intern]$_1$ left and [$_{DP}$ every employee]$_1$ quit [$_{CP}$ who were in any of the basement offices]1.

approach, to claim that they are linked by a movement dependency is problematic. It seems rather far-fetched to suppose that the antecedents in [(1)] could have originated inside the relative clause (say, as a conjoined DP) to then be split and distributed across two clausal conjuncts after raising (a kind of 're-verse' Across-The-Board raising).". Also see Andrews (1975) and McKinney-Bock (2013), McKinney-Bock & Vergnaud (2014), Radford (2017: §5.2) for non raising analyses, and Baltin (2005).

2 Split antecedents with different grammatical functions belonging to the same sentence

The cases of RCs with split antecedents belonging to the same sentence appear to be possible in Italian and English as nonrestrictive RCs. See (4a) and (4b)), but not as restrictives. See the ungrammaticality of (5a)-(5e):

(4)   a.   Se Carlo$_i$ non amava più Anna$_j$, i quali$_{i,j}$ d'altra parte non si erano mai voluti veramente bene, una ragione c'era.
              'If C. was no longer in love with A. that at any rate never really loved each other, there was a motive.'
        b.   Se Piero$_i$ non si trova più tanto bene con Ida$_j$, tra i quali$_{i+j}$ d'altronde non c'è mai stata una vera amicizia,..
              'If P. no longer likes to stay with I. between whom in any event there never was a real friendship, …'

(5)   a.   *The dog is chasing the cat which were fighting (Andrews 1975: 116)
        b.   *A man met a woman yesterday who were similar   (Guéron 1980: 648; credited to N.Chomsky)
        c.   *The boy$_i$ looked at the girl$_j$ who$_{i+j}$ both like sports. (de Vries 2002: 67)
        d.   *A man visited a woman (yesterday) who were similar   (Baltin 2005: 255)
        e.   *Il ragazzo guardava la ragazza che entrambi amano gli sport (same as (5c))

Yet to judge from Chomsky (1975: fn47) referring to what would later be published as ex. (26) in (Perkins 1982: 284) similar sentences are apparently possible in Navajo (also see the discussion in Andrews 1975: 116ff):

(6) Łééchąą mósi yinoołchééł   ahigáné̜ʼę̜ʼ.   (Navajo;
     dog$_i$ cat$_j$ it-is-chasing-it-along they$_{i,j}$-are-fighting-REL
     Perkins 1982: 284)

     'ʼ*The dog$_i$ is chasing the cat$_j$, which$_{i,j}$ were fighting'.

In fact, they appear possible even in English, provided that the two antecedents
are related by a symmetric predicate. See Poschmann et al. (2016), citing an
example, (7), from Hoeksema (1986: 69):

(7) We always let those boys$_i$ play with those girls$_j$ [who$_{i,j}$ know one another
     from elementary school].

Once again, such cases of split antecedents are impossible in languages with pre-
nominal relative clauses. See Del Gobbo (2010), Del Gobbo (2015) on Chinese.
    A raising analysis for this second type of split antecedent relatives would
again seem to require special assumptions, while the same discourse grammar
analysis of nonrestrictives mentioned above appears to be able to provide an
analysis for this second type of split antecedent relatives.

References

Alexiadou, A., Law, P., Meinunger, A. & Wilder, C. 2000. Introduction. In A. Alex-
    iadou, P. Law, A. Meinunger & C. Wilder (eds.), *The syntax of relative clauses*.
    1–51. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.
Andrews, A.D.I. 1975. *Studies in the syntax of relative and comparative clauses*:
    MIT dissertation.
Arnold, D. 2004.   Non-restrictive relative clauses in Construction-Based
    HPSG. In S. Müller (ed.), *Online proceedings of the 11th international confer-
    ence on Head-Driven Phrase Structure Grammar*. 27–47. Stanford, CA: CSLI
    Publications.   `http://web.stanford.edu/group/cslipublications/`
    `cslipublications/HPSG/2004/abstr-arnold.shtml`.
Baltin, M. 2005. Extraposition. In M. Everaert & H. van Riemsdijk (eds.), *The
    blackwell companion to syntax*. 237–271. Oxford: Blackwell.
Cardoso, A. 2010. *Variation and change in the syntax of relative clauses. New
    evidence from Portuguese*: Universidade de Lisboa dissertation.
Cecchetto, C. & Donati, C. 2015. *(Re)labeling*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Chaves, R.P. 2012. Conjunction, cumulation and respectively readings. *Journal of Linguistics* 48. 297–344.

Chomsky, N. 1975. Questions of form and interpretation. *Linguistic Analysis* 1. 75–109.

Cinque, G. 1982. On the theory of relative clauses and markedness. *The Linguistic Review* 1. 247–294. (reprinted in Cinque 1995:54-103).

Cinque, G. 2008. Two types of nonrestrictive relatives. In O. Bonami & P. Cabredo Hofherr (eds.), *Empirical issues in syntax and semantics 7*. 99–137. Paris: CSSP. `http://www.cssp.cnrs.fr/eiss7/index_en.html`.

Cinque, G. to appear. *The syntax of relative clauses. A unified analysis*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Del Gobbo, F. 2010. On Chinese appositive relative clauses. *Journal of East Asian Linguistics* 19. 385–417.

Del Gobbo, F. 2015. Appositives in Mandarin Chinese and cross-linguistically. In A. Li, A. Simpson & W.T.D. Tsai (eds.), *Chinese syntax in a cross-linguistic perspective*. 73–99. New York: Oxford University Press.

Del Gobbo, F. 2017. More appositives in heaven and earth than are dreamt of in your linguistics. *Glossa: a journal of general linguistics* 2. 49.1–38.

Demirdache, H. 1991. *Resumptive chains in restrictive relatives, appositives and dislocation structures*: MIT dissertation.

Fox, D. & Johnson, K. 2016. Qr is restrictor sharing. In K.m. Kim, P. Umbal, T. Block, Q. Chan, T. Cheng, K. Finney, M. Katz, S. Nickel-Thompson & L. Shorten (eds.), *Proceedings of the 33rd West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics (wccfl 33)*. 1–16. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla.

Guéron, J. 1980. On the syntax and semantics of PP extraposition. *Linguistic Inquiry* 11. 637–678.

Hintikka, J. 1974. Quantifiers vs. Quantification Theory. *Linguistic Inquiry* 5. 153–177.

Hoeksema, J. 1986. An account of relative clauses with split antecedents. In M. Dalrymple, J. Goldberg, K. Hanson, M. Inman, C. Piñon & S. Wechsler (eds.), *Proceedings of the 5th West Coast Conference on Formal Linguistics (WCCFL 5)*. 68–86. Stanford, CA: CSLI Publications.

Jacobson, P. 1998. Antecedent contained deletion and pied-piping: Evidence for a variable-free semantics. In D. Strolovitch & A. Lawson (eds.), *Proceedings of the 8th Semantics and Linguistic Theory conference (salt 8)*. 74–91. Ithaca, NY: Cornell University.

Lin, J.W. & Tsai, W.T.D. 2015. Restricting non-restrictive relatives in Mandarin

Chinese. In A. Li, A. Simpson & W.T.D. Tsai (eds.), *Chinese syntax in a cross-linguistic perspective*. 100–127. New York: Oxford University Press.

Link, G. 1984. Hydras. On the logic of relative constructions with multiple heads. In F. Landman & F. Veltman (eds.), *Varieties of formal semantics*. 245–257. Dordrecht: Foris.

McKinney-Bock, K. 2013. Deriving split-antecedent relative clauses. *University of Pennsylvania Working Papers in Linguistics* 19. 113–122.

McKinney-Bock, K. & Vergnaud, J.R. 2014. Grafts and beyond. Graph-theoretic syntax. In K. McKinney-Bock & M.L. Zubizarreta (eds.), *Primitive elements of grammatical theory*. 207–236. London: Routledge.

Moltmann, F. 1992. *Coordination and comparatives*: MIT dissertation.

Overfelt, J. 2015. Extraposition of NPIs from Np. *Lingua* 164. 25–44.

Perkins, E. 1982. Extraposition of relative clauses in Navajo. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 48. 277–285.

Perlmutter, D.M. & Ross, J.R. 1970. Relative clauses with split antecedents. *Linguistic Inquiry* 1. 350.

Poschmann, C., Bargmann, S., Götze, C., Holler, A., Sailer, M., Webelhuth, G. & Zimmermann, T.E. 2016. Split-antecedent RCs and the symmetry of predicates. Paper presented at *Sinn und Bedeutung 22*, 7-10 September 2017, Berlin/Potsdam.

Radford, A. 2017. Relative clauses in Real English. Ms., University of Essex, (forthcoming with Cambridge University Press).

Rochemont, M.S. & Culicover, P.W. 1990. *English focus constructions and the theory of grammar*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Smits, R.J.C. 1989. *Eurogrammar. The relative and cleft constructions of the Germanic and Romance languages*. Dordrecht: Foris.

de Vries, M. 2002. *The syntax of relativization* Utrecht. LOT.

Webelhuth, G., Sailer, M. & Walker, H. 2013. Introduction. In G. Webelhuth, M. Sailer & H. Walker (eds.), *Rightward movement in a comparative perspective*. 1–60. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Yoshitaka Erlewine, M. & Kotek, H. 2015. The structure and interpretation of non-restrictive relatives: Evidence from relative pronoun pied-piping. In *Proceedings from the annual meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society, 51*. 149–163. Chicago, IL: Chicago Linguistic Society.

Zhang, N.N. 2007. The syntactic derivations of split antecedent relative clause constructions. *Taiwan Journal of Linguistics* 5. 19–48.

Zhang, N.N. 2010. *Coordination in syntax*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

A dummy and a diminutive
in Dutch verbal lore

Norbert Corver

1 Introduction

In her study of subject omission in present-day written English, Liliane Haegeman draws our attention to the theoretical relevance of peripheral data for linguistic theorizing (see also Schmerling 1973, Thrasher 1977). Specifically, English (core grammar) does not allow subject omission in finite clauses, as shown in (1), but in specific written registers such as diaries, personal letters, e-mails or notes, English does allow for a subject to be non-overt. This is exemplified in (2); examples drawn from Haegeman (1990, 2007).

(1)   a.   *Have bought a book.
       b.   I have bought a book.

(2)   a.   ∅Have done 110 pages. (Diary of Virginia Woolf, p. 33; 11 November)
       b.   ∅Dreamt that I picked up a New Yorker. (Plath 304)

In this article I discuss a peripheral phenomenon attested in Dutch nursery rhymes and children's songs (so-called verbal lore), namely the pattern *van je XP*, where XP can be a linguistic expression that designates a sound-symbolic, sequential (e.g. counting) or repetitive activity. The Dutch children's song in (3) displays four instances of this phenomenon, each of which is marked in boldface. The left part in (3) represents the Dutch nursery rhyme, while the right part gives the (literal) English translation for each line of the Dutch verse.[1]

---

[1]The nursery rhymes and children's songs can be found in the following data sources: van Vloten & Brandts-Buys (1894), Abramsz (1911) and the following website: `http://www.overtuin.net`.

(3)　　Twee emmertjes water halen　　two bucket-DIM-PL water get-INF
　　　　Twee emmertjes pompen　　　two bucket-DIM-PL pump-INF
　　　　De meisjes op de klompen　　　the girls on the wooden-shoes
　　　　De jongens op hun houten been　the boys on their wooden leg
　　　　Je mag niet door mijn straatje heen　you may not through my street-
　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　DIM PRT

　　　　Van je ras ras ras　　　　　of *je ras ras ras*
　　　　rijdt de koning door de plas　　goes the king through the puddle
　　　　Van je voort voort voort　　of *je ahead ahead ahead*
　　　　rijdt de koning door de poort　　goes the king through the gate
　　　　Van je voort voort voort　　　of *je erk erk erk*
　　　　rijdt de koning naar de kerk　　goes the king to the church
　　　　Van je één, twee, drie!　　　of *je* one two three

The article is organized as follows: Section 2 examines the grammatical nature of *van* in expressions such as *van je ras ras ras*, and section 3 does the same for the element *je*. It will be proposed that *van* is a dummy (i.e., meaningless) element that spells out the categorial node no and that *je* is a diminutive morpheme, which appears to be able to occur on its own; that is, it does not need a lexical category – a noun – to which it can attach. Section 3 discusses a few other structural environments in which this "independent" diminutive morpheme possibly is present. Section 4 concludes the article.

2 Van + XP in Dutch verbal lore

Before turning to the pattern *van je XP*, I discuss a different but arguably related pattern, viz. *van + XP*. Some illustrations are given in (4):

(4)   Daar ging een meisje over het land.   there walked a girl across the land
        Zij had een korfje al in haar hand.   she had a basket-DIM PRT in her
                                                    hand

        Daar was in **van gladderdeglad**.   there was in of smooth-*er-de*-
                                                    smooth

        Daar was in **van strijkerdestrijk**.   there was in of pet-*er-de*-pet
        Daar was in **van kijkerdekijk**.   there was in of look-*er-de*-look
        Daar was in **van krolderdekrol**.   there was in of caterwaul-*er-de*-
                                                    caterwaul

                                                                    (riddle rhyme)

        Twee kinderen zouden naar school   two children would to school go
        gaan.
        Ze waren zo vrolijk en blij.   they were so cheerful and happy
        In de verte hoorden ze een orgeltje.   in the distance heard they a barrel-
                                                organ-DIM

        Daar moesten ze eventjes bij.   there had.to.stand they briefly PRT
        En 't orgeltje speelde **van holie ha   and the barrel-organ-DIM played of
        hij**.   *holie ha hij*
        En de kinderen dansten er bij.   and the children danced there with
                                            (= while the organ played)

The linguistic expression van *gladderdeglad* fulfills the role of (argumental) sub-
ject of a clause. The sentence *Daar was in van gladderdeglad* can be paraphrased
as "something very smooth was in it, i.e. in the basket". The other *van+XP* ex-
pressions fulfill the same role and have a similar meaning: *van strijkerdestrijk*
designates something strokeable, *van kijkerdekijk* something which is looking
around, and *van krolderdekrol* stands for something which can caterwaul. Ar-
guably, the expression *van holie ha hij* in the second nursery rhyme fulfills the
role of direct object. The sentence containing it can be paraphrased as: "And
the barrel-organ played this", where this corresponds to "holie ha hij".

The question obviously arises how to analyze *van*. What I would like to pro-
pose is that *van* 'of' is a minimal manifestation of the syntactic category 'noun'. In
a way, it acts like a dummy noun, whose contents is provided by the expression
that follows van (e.g., *gladderdeglad*). In what follows, I will briefly give some
background for this analysis of *van*, basing myself on earlier generative-linguistic
analyses of English *of*.

In Chomsky (1986), the element *of* is considered to be a manifestation of

genitival case. As Chomsky (p. 194) notes, "Genitive Case is realized morphologically by affixation of some element to the NP: of in complement position, the possessive element POSS [= 's; NC] in subject position." These two modes of morphological realization are depicted in (5)

(5) a. the [destruction [the city]] → the [destruction$_N$ [**of** + [the city]]]
     b. [[the city] destruction] → [[the city] + **'s**] destruction]

In Emonds (1985) and Pesetsky (2013), it is argued that Case is not a primitive category but rather an affixal realization of a Part-of-Speech. In other words, Case is a part-of-speech-suffix, or in Emonds's terms: an 'alternative realization' of a categorial head. According to this approach, genitival Case is an affixal realization of the category 'noun'. More specifically, *of* and *-s* in (5) are *nominal* affixes "assigned" by the noun *destruction* to the satellite constituent *the city*. To phrase it differently, the nominal property (i.e., N) associated with *destruction* is realized alternatively (i.e. affixally) on the satellite phrase. Schematically, for a phrase like *the destruction of the city*:

(6) the [destruction [the city]] → the [destruction$_N$ [N$_{aff}$ (= of) + [the city]]]

With Pesetsky (2013), I take there to be two ways in which Case can appear on a constituent: (i) syntactic case assignment, as, for example, in (6), and (ii) Case as a lexical property. As regards this last way of Case appearance, Pesetsky (2013: 8) makes the following statement:

> "[...] every element that comes from the lexicon as a noun, determiner, verb or preposition could equally well be described as coming from the lexicon assigned to the corresponding case-categories. In other words, from the point of view of syntax, every noun can be described as 'born genitive', every verb as 'born accusative', every determiner as 'born nominative', and every preposition as 'born oblique'."

According to this statement, one should be able to find overt manifestations of genitival Case (i.e., affixal N) on nouns. I will argue that this is exactly what we find with *van* in (3) and (4). That is, *van* is the manifestation (spell-out) of the "genitival property" with which N is born. In Pesetsky's (p. 8-9) terms, *van* is a surface manifestation of "the noun's primeval state – that is, the form in which it entered the syntactic derivation [...]". But before elaborating on this, I would like to make one more theoretical step. In line with Marantz (1997), Borer (2005) and

others, I assume that lexical categories (nouns, verbs, *et cetera*) have the form f-Root, where f is a categorial head and the Root (henceforth √) is unspecified as to category. Thus, the English noun car and its Dutch counterpart auto have a composite structure: *[ₙP n° [√P √car/auto]]*. For the above-mentioned approach to Case, this means that genitival case is an affixal no. This categorial affix can surface on a satellite constituent of the noun through case assignment, or it can surface on no itself (the "no-as-born-genitive" way; i.e. primeval genitive). The latter strategy can be represented as follows: *[ₙP n (= van) [Root]]*.

The question obviously arises whether there are any nominal expressions displaying the "no-as-born-genitive" strategy. Notice that we do not find van in the following nominal expressions: *[DP de [ₙP (*van) [√auto]]]*; (the (of) car; intended meaning: 'the car'). Possibly, this relates to the fact that the nominal nature of the phrase is already clear from the presence of the definite article de. Furthermore, raising of the Root *auto* to no yields the amalgam [√auto+n°]. The overtness of the Root may make the appearance of van superfluous and, for reasons of economy, impossible. That is, I take the surfacing of n° as van to be a last resort strategy, just like English *do*-support (Chomsky 1957, Lasnik 2000), which is found, for example, in clausal environments featuring a silent verbal complement of T (*John did ∅ too*) or an overt pro-form that substitutes for the verbal complement (*John did so too*). In short, *van*, just like the auxiliary *to do*, is a dummy element that surfaces in order save a structural representation.

I take the element *van* in (7)-B' to instantiate the "born-genitive" strategy. That is, van represents a nominal expression of the following type: *[nP n (= van) [Root]]*. More specifically, I take it to be an indefinite pronominal phrase which, just like its definite counterpart *'t* 'it' (i.e. *[DP 't [nP ∅]]*) in (7)-B, has the proposition 'Jan passes the exam' in (7)-A as its antecedent.[2]

(7) A: Haalt Jan het examen?
         passes Jan the exam
         'Will Jan pass the exam?'
     B: Ik denk [DP 't]$_i$ wel/niet t$_i$.   ('*t* = proposition 'Jan passes the exam')
         I think []   it   for.sure /not
         'I think so / I don't think so.'
     B': Ik denk [nP van]$_i$ wel/niet   t$_i$. (*van* = 'Jan passes the exam')
         I think   of   for.sure/not

---

[2]Interestingly, van in (7)-B' requires the presence of the polarity marker *wel/niet*. Thus, the string *ik denk van* is ill-formed. The pro-form *'t*, on the contrary, cán occur without *wel/niet*, as in: *Ik denk 't* (I think it, 'I think so').

'I think so / I don't think so.'

Let us now return to the linguistic expressions *van gladderdeglad* and *van holie ha hij* in (4). I propose that the element *van* is a surface manifestation of the categorial head no. I tentatively propose that its appearance relates to the special status of the Root. That is, the Root designates something that is not directly associated with the conceptual meaning of a noun (say, denoting an entity or individual). For example, *holie ha hij* has sound-symbolic meaning, *gladderdeglad* designates an attribute ('being smooth'), and *kijkerdekijk* designates an event/activity ('to look'). Possibly, the inner structure of these expressions – maybe, a coordinate structure consisting of coordinated roots; see Corver (2014, 2015) – blocks raising of the Root to $n°$. As a result of the special nature of the Root, $n°$ surfaces as van in order to make the nominal nature of the entire expression recoverable. Thus, *van gladder de glad* and *van holie ha hij* have the structures in (8):[3]

(8) a. $[_{nP}$ $n°$ (= *van*) $[_{ConjP}$ √gladder $[_{Conj'}$ $[_{Conj}$ de] √glad]]]
     b. $[_{nP}$ $n°$ (= *van*) $[_{ConjP}$ √holie $[_{Conj'}$ $Conj_\varnothing$ $[_{ConjP}$ ha $[_{Conj'}$ $Conj_\varnothing$ hij]]]]][4]

The next section discusses the pattern *van je ras ras ras*, which was introduced in (3). The question that needs to be answered is: what is the grammatical nature of *je*?

3   Van je XP

Before the question regarding the nature of je is addressed, it is useful to give some additional examples of children's songs containing the pattern *van je XP*.

---

[3]I take de to be decomposable into *-d* and *-e*. The latter element is a minimal spell-out (viz., schwa) of the Conj-head (see Corver 2014, 2015). The presence of d presumably results from a phonological rule: insertion of /d/ in the phonological environment *r _ er*. Compare insertion of /d/ when the agentive suffix *-er* is attached to a verbal root: *verhuur* 'to let', *verhuur-d-er* 'landlord'.
[4]The representation $Conj_\varnothing$ stands for a phonologically empty coordinate conjunction.

(9) In Holland staat een huis (2x)   in Holland stands a house
     In Holland staat een huis, ja, ja.   in Holand stands a house yes yes
     Van je singela singela hopsasa   of je singela singela hopsasa
     In Holland staat een huis (2x)   In Holland stands a house

     Drie schuintamboers die kwamen   three drummers they came from
     uit het oosten (2x)   the east
     Van je rom bom, wat maal ik erom?   of je rombom why whine I about.it
     Zij kwamen uit het oosten, rom-   they came from the east rombom
     bom

     En van je hela hola,   and of je hela hola
     houdt er de moed maar in! (3x)   keep there the courage PRT in (=
                                                 stay positive)

     En van je hela hola   and of je hela hola
     houdt er de moed maar in! (2x)   keep there the courage PRT in

     En van je hotsie knotsie knetter,   and of je hotsie knotsie knetter
     van je jippie jippie jee.   of je jippie jippie jee
     Maar zijn paard was zeer vermoeid   but his horse was very tired and it
     en die wou niet verder mee.   wanted not further PRT
     Maar hij moest de boeven vangen   but he had.to the bad-guys catch
     dus nam hij een ander beest   so took he a different animal
     en nu mag je zelf bedenken   and now may you yourself imagine
     wat voor beest dat is geweest   what kind.of animal that has been

The first hypothesis that comes to mind with regard to *je*'s grammatical nature is the following: *je* is a second person singular weak possessive pronoun (see Haeseryn et al 1997). Such a pronoun normally appears in possessive noun phrases such as je adres in (10).

(10)   Is dit je   adres?
       is this your address
       'Is this your address?'

The question obviously arises whether there is any support for such a possessive pronominal analysis. If it is a second person pronoun, one might try to connect its appearance to the availability of an addressee (the hearer/reader) in the dis-

course context. The sequence *En van je hela, hola, houdt er de moed maar in!* is interesting in this respect, since *van je XP* precedes an imperative clause. As has been shown in the literature on Dutch imperatives, there is a silent pronominal subject (say, YOU) present in the imperative clause; see e.g. Bennis (2006). It is imaginable that *je* in *van je XP* is somehow connected to the second person pronominal subject of the clause. Schematically:

(11)   and of je hela hola keep there the courage PRT in
        and of je hela hola keep there the courage PRT in
        'And hela hola, keep it up! / stay positive!'

Clearly, this argument from imperative clauses does not have much strength, since many other clauses preceded by *van je XP* do not contain a second person subject, but rather a first or third person subject.

(12)   a.   Van *je*$_{\text{2P.SG}}$ rom bom, wat maal *ik*$_{\text{1P.SG}}$ erom?
              of *je* rom bom why whine I about.it
              'Boom boom, why whine about it?'
        b.   Van *je*$_{\text{2P.SG}}$ ras, ras, ras, rijdt *de koning*$_{\text{3P.SG}}$ door de plas.
              of *je* ras ras ras goes the king through the puddle
              'Go go go, there goes the king through the puddle!'

Notice also that the possessive pronominal analysis faces a number of problems: First of all, it is not clear at all what exactly the possessive relationship is between, for example, *je* and the sound symbolic sequence *hela hola*. Secondly, the weak possessive pronoun cannot be replaced by its strong counterpart *jouw*: **Van jouw ras ras ras*. If *je* is a second person possessive pronoun, it is unclear why the strong pronominal form is impossible.

Instead of claiming that *je* is a possessive pronoun, I tentatively propose that *je* is a diminutive morpheme. Thus, *je* corresponds to the element that we normally find attached to a nominal host, as in (13)

(13)   Ik heb *vlecht-je-s*   in mijn haar.
        I   have braid-DIM-PL in my hair

At first sight, this diminutive analysis does not seem very plausible. For one thing, *je* cannot occur independently; that is, it needs a nominal host to which it can be attached:

(14)   a. *Ik heb *een je*   in mijn haar.
              I   have a   DIM in my   hair
             'I have something small in my hair.'
        b. *Ik heb *jes*   in mijn haar.
              I   have DIM-PL in my   hair
             'I have small things in my hair.'

Even though it is true that the diminutive morpheme normally needs a nomi-
nal host to which it can attach, there are structural environments in which the
diminutive *-je* does not combine with a noun, at least not with an overt noun (cf.
Corver (to appear). Consider, for example, the italicized patterns in (15):

(15)   a. Jan reed   [erg zacht-je-s]
            Jan drove very slow-DIM-S
            'Jan drove very slowly.'
        b. [Hoe zacht-je-s] reed   Jan?
            how slow-DIM-S drove Jan
            'How slowly did John drive?'

In these examples, je is directly preceded by an adjective and followed by the
bound morpheme *-s*. This *-s* must be present: *erg/hoe zachtje*. The phrase
erg/hoe zachtjes in (15) has an adverbial function; it designates the manner in
which Jan's driving took place. Although an analysis according to which *erg/hoe
zachtjes* is an adverbially used adjective phrase is tempting, it faces the problem
that the diminutive *-je* normally does not attach to adjectives. It typically com-
bines with nouns. Sticking to the generalization that *-je* only attaches to nouns,
I propose an alternative analysis for *erg/hoe zacht-je-s*, namely the one given in
(16):

(16)   [FP [erg/hoe zacht] [F' F [ClasP -je [nP n° (= -s) [√P √WAY]]]]]

According to this analysis, erg/hoe zacht is an attributive adjective phrase con-
tained within a nominal expression whose Root is silent. As indicated by WAY, I
take this silent root (Kayne 2003) to designate manner.[5] Following Wiltschko
(2005), I analyze the diminutive morpheme as a classifier that conveys 'small
piece' (see also De Belder 2011). In informal terms, *-je* + WAY designates "small

---

[5]The silent noun TIME is also possible in this structural environment: *even-tje-s* (just-DIM-S,
'just, a little while').

90

manner", which possibly is at the basis of the affective flavor of expressions such as *zachtjes*. In the spirit of what was said about "genitival Case" in section 2, the bound morpheme *-s* is analyzed as an affixal manifestation of the categorial head n°. The appearance of dummy *-s* has a last resort flavor: it must appear to make the nominal status of nP recoverable at the surface.[6]

Let's return to expressions such as *van je ras ras ras* and *van je hela hola*. I have just argued that *je* is the diminutive morpheme and, in section 2, I proposed that *van* is a dummy element; more specifically, it is a surface manifestation of the categorial head n°. These analyses of *je* and *van* bring me to the following analysis of the pattern *van je ras ras ras* (and other instantiations of this pattern):

(17) a. base structure:
          [$_{ClasP}$ -je [nP n° [$_{ConjP}$ √ras [$_{Conj'}$ Conj⊡ [$_{ConjP}$ √ras [Conj' Conj$_\varnothing$ √ras]]]]]]
      b. derived structure:
          [$_{ClasP}$ [n° (= van) + je] [$_{nP}$ n̶° [$_{ConjP}$ √ras [$_{Conj'}$ Conj$_\varnothing$ [$_{ConjP}$ √ras [$_{Conj'}$ Conj$_\varnothing$ ras]]]]]]

As indicated in (17), the linear order *van je* results from head movement and adjunction of n° to the classifier head *-je*. I tentatively propose that this movement is triggered by the affixal status of the diminutive morpheme *-je*; that is, *je* must have a host to which it can be attached, quite analogously with the fact that the dummy verb *to do* provides a host for the Tense and inflectional features associated with the functional head T (cf. Lasnik 2000: 123) Stranded Affix Filter: "A stranded affix is no good").

---

[6]If je in (16) is a classifier that must be followed by *-s*, one would expect there to be other classifiers in Dutch displaying the same behavior. A plausible candidate is *stuks* ('piece-s') in an utterance like (i)-B. Just as in *zachtjes*, *-s* must be present in this context. I propose *stuks* has the structure in (ii).

(i) A: Hoeveel   broeken neem je   mee? B: Twee stuk*(-s)
        how-many pants   take   you with   two   piece-s
     'A: How many pants do you take? B: Two.'

(ii) [$_{NumP}$ twee [$_{ClasP}$ stuk [$_{nP}$ n° (= -s) [√P √∅]]]]

4 The most diminutive of words

In the previous section I tried to show that *je* can occur independently, in the sense that there is no overt noun to which it can attach. Occurring on its own due to the absence of an overt noun, one might characterize this "independent" diminutive as "the most diminutive of words". A pertinent example was *zachtjes* in (15), where *-s* was analyzed as a dummy element that spells out the categorial node n°. The question, obviously, arises as to whether there are more linguistic expressions featuring this "most diminutive" *je*. In what follows, I present some potential candidates, but I emphasize that further research of these ill-understood patterns is definitely needed.

Consider the following pair:

(18) a. Dit is een leuk *adres-je*   voor Spaanse wijn.
          this is a   nice address-DIM for   Spanish wine
      b. Dit is *JE adres*   voor Spaanse wijn!
          this is *je* address for   Spanish wine
          'This is THE address for Spanish wine' (THE pronounced with a long vowel)

In (18a), *je* is a diminutive morpheme attached to the noun *adres*. Just as *zachtjes* in (15), *adresje* has an affective flavor. It does not imply that the address is literally small (e.g., a short street name). Rather, je contributes evaluative or expressive meaning (*in casu* positive valence) to the noun. Thus, objects that are big (e.g. a villa or a big car) can be referred to by N+DIM when the diminutive carries evaluative meaning, as in: *aardig huisje!* (nice house-DIM) and *leuk autootje!* ('nice car-DIM'). In a way, the literal meaning of the diminutive (small size) is bleached and an expressive-evaluative meaning is associated with it.

Consider next the expression *JE adres* in (18b), which has the characteristic property that the element *je*, which normally is a phonologically weak element, carries accent. The meaning associated with *je* can be paraphrased as "par excellence" (see Broekhuis & den Dikken 2016: 735). Traditionally, *JE* in (18b) is analyzed as a possessive pronoun (see Haeseryn et al. 1997). Even though a paraphrase like "the address for you (= addressee)" is imaginable for *JE adres*, the question arises as to why je cannot be replaced by the strong possessive pro-

---

⁷After Shakespeare's 'the most diminutive of birds' (Macbeth, Act 4, scene 2, words spoken by Lady Macduff).

noun *jouw*: **Dit is jouw adres voor Spaanse wijn!*. Instead of analyzing *JE* in (18a) as a possessive pronoun, I tentatively propose that *JE* is a diminutive morpheme, which, in line with Wiltschko (2005), I take to be a classifier. More specifically, I take it to be the same expressive-evaluative diminutive morpheme as in (15). By using this affective diminutive *je*, the speaker indicates that the referent of *JE* adres is the representative *par excellence* of the total set of addresses.

One may wonder where the *par excellence* meaning finds its origin. Given the fact that classifiers are often used to make things countable and therefore modifiable by a numeral, one might hypothesize that the *par excellence* reading finds its origin in the (hidden, i.e. silent) presence of the Dutch numeral *één* 'one'. Thus JE adres has the representation in (19), where *EEN* represents a silent numeral designating singularity (and uniqueness).

(19)   [$_{NumP}$ EEN [$_{ClasP}$ je [$_{nP}$ n$^{\circ}$ [$_{P}$ √adres]]]]

Interestingly, this *par excellence* reading is also attested in sentences like (20a), where *eentje* consists of the numeral *een* 'one' and the diminutive morpheme *(t)je*. The element *er* is the so-called quantitative pro-form *er*, which arguably substitutes for nP. (20b) gives the structure of *eentje*; see Barbiers (2005) for further discussion of the numeral 'one'.

(20)   a.   Je   bent me er   eentje!
              you are   me there one-DIM
              'you are really something! / you are one-of-a-kind!'

        b.   Je bent me er$_i$ [$_{NumP}$ één [$_{ClasP}$ tje [$_{nP}$ t$_i$]]]

Notice that just like *zachtjes* in (15) and *adresje* in (18a), *eentje* has an affective flavor: the speaker, whose "presence" is clear from the ethical dative *me*, qualifies (and evaluates) the addressee as being unique in a certain sense.

I finish this section with another construction that possibly features the "independent" diminutive *je*.[8] This construction is the italicized expression *van je*

---

[8]Other constructions with a *par excellence* reading that possibly feature diminutive (i.e., classifier) *je* are *je dát* in (i) and *jé van hét* in (ii); the diacritic ´ designates that these words carry accent. I leave the analysis of these constructions for future research.

(i)   a.   Ik vond   het niet [je dát]
             I   found it   not je that
             'I wasn't very enthusiastic about it.'

welste in (21), which acts as a modifier of *krijste*.

(21) De baby krijste   *van je wel-st-e*.
      the baby screamed of   *je* considerable-SUP-*e*
      'The baby screamed enormously.'

Observe that, at the surface, *van je welste* looks a bit like the expression *van je XP*, discussed in section 3; see also *van je ras ras ras* in example (3). In both constructions, the sequence van je occurs at the beginning of a phrase. In the spirit of the analysis given in (19) for *van je ras ras ras*, I tentatively propose that *van je welste* has the base structure in (22a) and the derived structure given in (22b):

(22) a.   base structure:
           [$_{ClasP}$ -je [$_{nP}$ n° [$_{FP}$ welste [$_{F'}$ F [$_{nP}$ n° [√WAY]]]]]]
      b.   derived structure:
           [$_{ClasP}$ [n° (= *van*) + je] [$_{FP}$ welste [$_{F'}$ F [$_{nP}$ n° [√WAY]]]]]

According to this analysis, *welste* is an attributive superlative AP that modifies a silent manner noun (WAY). The element *van* is analyzed as the surface manifestation of the categorial node n°. I assume that *van* surfaces due to the silence of the Root; compare *do*-support in VP-ellipsis environments. The categorial node n° raises across the attributive AP and adjoins to the classifier *je*. This yields the amalgam *[n° (= van) + je]*.

---

       b.   Ik vond   het niet [jé van hét]
             I found it   not je of it
             'I wasn't very enthusiastic about it.'

Observe that besides *je dát* in (ia), we also find the expression *een datje* ('a that-DIM') in fixed expressions such as (iia)-(iib). In these examples, diminutive *je* is attached to the demonstrative pronoun.

(ii)   a.   Hij heeft altijd   wel een ditje   of een datje.
             he has   always PRT a   this-DIM or a   that-DIM
             'He has always something critical to say about it.'
       b.   Zij   spraken over ditjes   en datjes.
             they spoke   about this-DIM-s and that-DIM-s
             'They made small talk.'

5 Conclusion

Haegeman's (1990, 2007) study of subject omission in English finite clauses in certain written registers, draws our attention to the relevance of peripheral data for linguistic theorizing. In this article I examined the grammatical behavior of a peripheral construction (*van je XP*) found in Dutch verbal lore. I proposed an analysis according to which *van* is a surface manifestation of the categorial node n° and *je* a diminutive, which was analyzed as a classifier head. I hope to have shown that, even though the *van je XP* pattern looks peripheral and "exotic" from the outside, the atoms and rules that underlie this construction are those that are used for the formation of simple and more familiar constructions; see also Chomsky (2015).

References

Abramsz, S. 1911. *Rijmpjes en versjes uit de oude doos*. Amsterdam: J.M. Meulenhoff.

Barbiers, S. 2005. De syntactische atlas van de nederlandse dialecten. *Taal en Tongval (Themanummer)* 18. 7–40.

Bennis, H. 2006. Agreement, pro and imperatives. In P. Ackema, P. Brandt, M. Schoorlemmer & F. Weerman (eds.), *Arguments and agreement*. 101–127. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Borer, H. 2005. *Structuring sense. vol.1, in name only*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Broekhuis, H. & den Dikken, M. 2016. *Syntax of Dutch. Nouns and noun phrases, volume 2*. Amsterdam: Amsterdam University Press.

Chomsky, N. 1957. *Syntactic structures*. The Hague: Mouton.

Chomsky, N. 1986. *Knowledge of language: Its nature, origin, and use*. New York: Praeger.

Chomsky, N. 2015. Problems of projection: Extensions. In E. Di Dominico, C. Hamann & S. Matteini (eds.), *Structures, strategies and beyond: Studies in honour of Adriana Belletti*. 1–16. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Corver, N. 2014. Recursing in Dutch. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 32. 423–457.

Corver, N. 2015. Interjections as structured root expressions. In M. van Oostendorp & H. van Riemsdijk (eds.), *Representing structure in phonology and syntax*. 41–83. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Corver, N. to appear. Adverbial *-s*: So awks but so natural! In D.W. Lightfoot & J. Havenhill (eds.), *Variable properties in language: Their nature and acquisition*. Washington, DC: Georgetown University Press.

De Belder, M. 2011. *Roots and affixes. Eliminating lexical categories rom syntax*: Utrecht University & HUBrussel dissertation.

Emonds, J. 1985. *A unified theory of syntactic categories*. Dordrecht: Foris.

Haegeman, L. 1990. Non-overt subjects in diary contexts. In J. Mascaró & M. Nespor (eds.), *Grammar in progress. GLOW essays for Henk van Riemsdijk*. 167–174. Dordrecht: Foris.

Haegeman, L. 2007. Subject omission in present-day written English. On the theoretical relevance of peripheral data. *Rivista di Grammatica Generativa* 32. 91–124.

Haeseryn, W., Romijn, K., Geerts, G., de Rooij, J. & van den Toorn, M.C. 1997. *Algemene Nederlandse spraakkunst*. Groningen: Martinus Nijhoff Uitgevers.

Kayne, R. 2003. Silent years, silent hours. In L.O. Delsing, C. Falk, G. Josefsson & H.A. Sigurdhsson (eds.), *Grammar in focus: Festschrift for Christer Platzack. vol. 2*. 209–226. Lund: Wallin and Dalhol. Reprinted in Richard Kayne (2005). *Movement and Silence*, 241-260. Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press.

Lasnik, H. 2000. *Syntactic structures revisited. Contemporary lectures on classic Transformational Theory*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Marantz, A. 1997. No escape from syntax: Don't try morphological analysis in the privacy of your own lexicon. *University of Pennsylvania Working Papers in Linguistics* 4. 201–225.

Pesetsky, D. 2013. *Russian case morphology and the syntactic categories*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Schmerling, S. 1973. Subjectless sentences and the notion of surface structure. In C. Corum, T.C. Smith-Stark & A. Weiser (eds.), *Papers from the ninth Regional Meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society*. 577–586. Chicago, IL: Chicago Linguistic Society.

Thrasher, R. 1977. *One way to say more by saying less. A study of so-called subjectless sentences*, vol. 11 Kwansei Gakuin University Monograph Series. Tokyo: The Eihosha Ltd.

van Vloten, J. & Brandts-Buys, M.A. 1894. *Nederlandse baker- en kinderrijmen*. Leiden: Sijthoff, A.W.

Wiltschko, M. 2005. Why should diminutives count? In H. Broekhuis, N. Corver, R. Huijbregts, U. Kleinhenz & J. Koster (eds.), *Organizing grammar. Linguistic studies in honor of Henk van Riemsdijk*. 669–678. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

De kunst van de behoedzaamheid
The art of precaution

Karen De Clercq*

Er zijn weinig mensen die zich dieper in het moeras van Taal durven wagen dan Liliane. Er zijn ook weinig mensen die dat zo behoedzaam doen, zo beheerst en met een nooit aflatende trefzekerheid, zich volkomen bewust van alle gevaar dat op de loer ligt. Als daar zijn: onvermijdelijke focusgewassen, negatieve laaghangende takken, linksperifere stenen op het pad en onheilspellende expletieven in het soppende water. Liliane draait er haar hand niet voor om. Ze weet waar de gevaren loeren en onverschrokken schrijdt ze verder, recht op haar doel af, terwijl ze haar volgers als een bedreven gids subtiel waarschuwt voor uitstekende wortels op het pad.

Het soort behoedzaamheid dat Liliane aan de dag legt in haar taalkundig werk werd al van in de vroege Oudheid als een deugd beschouwd. En terecht. Het maakt Lilianes werk fijnzinnig en gedetailleerd, anticiperend en voorspellend. Hip-ogende kompassen of appjes om de tocht doorheen het drasland te vereenvoudigen kunnen Liliane niet verleiden. Haar aanpak is daarom ook nooit minimalistisch of vluchtig. Liliane vaart niet zoals Columbus zonder het te weten naar Amerika, maar zoekt doelgericht zoals Livingstone naar de bron van de Nijl.

Gewapend met grondige kennis en analytische vaardigheden baant ze zich een weg door het dichte veen en zoekt ze alternatieve routes naar meer kennis van Taal. Op haar tocht werpt ze polders op om bedreigd land te beschermen en ontdekt ze kreken met blauwgevleugelde libellen en witte waterlelies, verborgen tussen het riet. Haar expedities monden uit in gedetailleerde kaarten die onvindbaar zijn op Google maps.

Ik wil je danken, Liliane. Om me te gidsen op mijn weg door het moeras. Om me de vrijheid te geven te duiken naar de miniscule negatiemossen onder de mattenbies. Om me te vergezellen bij dat duiken. Om me op te vissen. Om

---
*English translation below

97

me watertorkruid te tonen, gele plomp en andere vegetatieve rijkdom aan de waterkant.

Morgen trek je nieuwe laarzen aan, Liliane, begeef je je op een nieuw pad, maar er is nog veel te ontdekken en in kaart te brengen. Ik blijf je reisverhalen volgen. Laat maar horen als je er nog eens samen op uit wilt. Mijn expeditiemateriaal staat alvast klaar.

[English translation]

Few people dare to venture deeper into the swamp of Language than Liliane. Few people do this so precautiously, with such mastery and unfailing accuracy, fully aware of all dangers lying ahead. As there are: inevitable focus crops, negative low hanging branches, left peripheral stones on the path and ominous expletives in the sopping water. Liliane can handle them. She knows where the dangers lurk and bravely strides on, straight towards her goal, while subtly warning her followers, as a skilled guide, for protruding roots on the path.

The kind of precaution that Liliane displays in her linguistic work has been considered a virtue since early antiquity. And rightly so. It makes Liliane's work delicate and detailed, anticipatory and predictive. Hip-looking compasses or apps to facilitate the journey through the marshlands cannot seduce Liliane. Her approach is therefore never minimalist nor superficial. Liliane does not sail unknowingly to America like Columbus, but searches actively for the source of the Nile like Livingstone.

Armed with thorough knowledge and analytical skills, she makes her way through the dense peat bog and looks for alternative routes to a better knowledge of Language. On her journey she throws up polders to protect endangered land and discovers creeks with blue-winged dragonflies and white water lilies, hidden among the reeds. Her expeditions lead to detailed maps, untraceable on Google maps.

I want to thank you, Liliane. For guiding me on my way through the swamp. For giving me the freedom to dive to minuscule mosses of negativity under the lakeshore bulrush. For joining me in diving. For picking me up when I tripped. For showing me fine leaf water dropwort, yellow water-lilies and other riches on the waterfront.

Tomorrow you'll put on new boots, Liliane, you'll be walking a new path, but there's still a lot to discover and map out. I will continue to follow your travel stories and maps. Let me know if you want to go out exploring together again. My expedition gear is already packed up.

'What would you rather me say?'

Marcel Den Dikken

Abstract
In varieties of English, the combination of *would* and *rather* (also: *sooner/as soon/as well*) can be followed not just by a bare infinitive (as in *they would rather leave*) or by a finite clause (*they would rather (that) I (would) leave*), but also by an infinitive with an accusative subject (as in *they would rather me leave*), which can even be coreferent with the matrix subject (*I would rather me leave*). This short paper focuses on this AcI-infinitival construction. It shows that the infinitival clause is a fully clausal complement of rather, capable of harbouring sentential negation and constituting a local binding domain for its subject, whose accusative is not an assigned case. The paper closes on some remarks about the evolution of this construction, against the background of the form and distribution of the subjunctive.

Sentences of the type in (1) feature a degree-modified dispositional adjective or adverb (rather, sooner, as soon, as well) followed by a bare infinitival clause with an accusative subject.[1]

(1) a. they would rather me leave
   b. they would sooner me leave
   c. they would just as soon me leave
   d. they would just as well me leave

---

[1]Though this construction seems particularly common with me (representing the speaker) as the accusative subject of the infinitive, it is not restricted to *me*, as witness sentences such as *I would rather him/her/us//them be happy*. Though the initial exemplifications in (1) are made-up sentences to keep them simple and directly comparable, the bulk of the examples in this paper are attested sentences culled from the internet, and checked with native-speaker linguists. In what follows, exemplification will generally be confined to *rather*.

The infinitival clause is transparent for extraction of its object (as in (2a)), its subject (as in (2b)), and even a modifier (as in (2c)).[2]

(2) a. what would you rather me say?
     b. who would you rather kiss you like that?
     c. how would you rather me do this?

The adjective cannot be *wh*-fronted, however, despite the fact that it can be intensified with *much*:

(3) a. you would much rather me do this
     b. *how much rather would you me do this?

In precluding extraction of the adjective, the construction in (1) patterns like the one in (4), and unlike that in (5).

(4) a. you would much rather that I do this
     b. *how much rather would you that I do this?

(5) a. you would much rather do this
     b. how much rather would you do this?

In (5a), *much rather* is a modifier of the projection of *do*, which is the main verb of a single clause. In (4a), we are evidently dealing with a biclausal construction, with the *that*-clause serving as the complement of *rather*. This straightforwardly explains the contrast between (4b) and (5a) in the latter but not in the former, *(how) much rather* is a constituent. The fact that (3b) behaves the same way as (4b) suggests that in (3a) and (1), too, what follows *rather* is a clausal complement:

(6) [AP A=*rather* [CLAUSE]]

The clausality of what follows *rather* is perfectly apparent for variants of (1) in which the infinitive is adorned with the infinitival marker *to*, as in (7a), which, like (1), allows extraction, as shown in (7b).

(7) a. you would rather me to do this
     b. what would you rather me to do?

---

[2] Again, the pattern is not limited to *me*: sentences such as *what would you rather him say?* (directly parallel to (2a)) and *what would you rather him be to you?* (with extraction of the predicate of a copular infinitive) occur frequently as well.

But for the bare infinitive in (1) as well, there are clear indications that it is a clausal constituent. Thus, sentential negation is grammatical in the bare-infinitival clause, as shown by the fact that *not* in (8) licenses negative polarity items:

(8)   you would rather/sooner/just as soon/just as well me not do anything

Since sentential negation is by consensus (see Zanuttini 1997, references there, and work in its wake) dependent on T, the bare infinitive in (8) must at a minimum be a TP – i.e., a full clause.

   The hypothesis that the bare-infinitival constituent in (1) is a full clause helps us explain the otherwise quite intractable fact that the subject of the bare infinitive can be a pronoun coreferential with the matrix subject:[3]

(9)   a.   I would rather me leave
        b.   I would rather me die than you

For (9b), the acceptability of *me* could perhaps be ascribed to the fact that this pronoun is a contrastive focus (contrasted with *you*). But in (9a) the subject of the infinitive is not contrastive. The fact that it allows itself to be coreferential with the matrix subject indicates that the bare-infinitival constituent is a local domain for binding, just as in *I would rather that I leave*. The postulation of clausal structure for the bare infinitive contributes to making this understandable.

   By itself, however, the clausal (i.e., TP) status of the complement of *rather* does not immediately facilitate a coreference relation between the matrix and embedded subjects: for bare AcI-infinitives embedded under causative or perception verbs, the grammaticality of clausal negation (as in (10a)) suggests full clausality; yet coreference of the pronominal subject of the infinitive with the matrix subject is impossible, as (10b) shows.

(10)   a.   I made/saw him not eat anything
        b.   *I made/saw me leave

The difference between (1) and causative and perception verb constructions lies in the category of the selector of the bare AcI-infinitive: an element of category A in the former and a verb in the latter. Thanks to the fact that in causative and perception verb constructions, the infinitive's selector is of the same category as the head of the infinitival complement, the two domains engage in what is

---

[3]Like (1) and (2), the pattern in (9) is attested with accusative pronouns other than *me*, as in *he would rather him be dead* or *they would rather them do work around the house*.

variably called 'reanalysis', 'restructuring' or 'clause union'. In (1), where the categories of the bare infinitive and its selector are different, such integration is impossible. The infinitival TP in (1) thus remains an independent binding domain, making (9b) grammatical.

Though opaque for binding, the fact that the infinitival clause in the complement of rather is a selected constituent renders it transparent to extraction: we saw this in (2) for disjoint reference cases; (11) shows that in coreference contexts, though much rarer, *wh*-extraction is also possible — even for a predicate nominal (*what* in (11) is a predicate), which strongly resists extraction from islands (**what don't you know whether to call these linguists?* vs. ?*which linguists don't you know whether to call 'generativists'?*).

(11)   what would they rather them be named?

With respect to extraction, (1) and (9) are similar to *likely*+infinitive constructions, in which the infinitival complement to the adjective *likely* is likewise transparent to argument and non-argument *wh*-extraction (*what is he likely to say?*, *how is he likely to solve the problem?*).

What could be the source of the accusative case of the subject of the AcI-infinitive? For causative and perception verb constructions, the answer is straightforward: the matrix clause contributes an accusative case feature, assignable to the subject of the infinitival clause. But in the construction in (1), the selector of the infinitival clause is of category A, incapable of assigning structural case.[4] The morphological accusative case of the subject of the infinitival clause in (1) can be dealt with in either of two ways. One would be to treat it as a manifestation of *default* case, which in English is indeed accusative. Alternatively, it may be possible to invoke Marantz's (1991) notion of *dependent* case: nominative case in the matrix domain is already used up by the matrix subject, so the subject of the infinitival clause gets the dependent accusative instead. The feasibility of a dependent-case approach to the accusative in (1) will depend crucially on whether *they* and *me* in these sentences belong to the same local domain. Above, we saw that the infinitival clause embedded under *rather* is an opaque domain for binding; yet at the same time it is a transparent domain for *wh*-extraction. If the infinitive's complement status is sufficient to include it in same local domain as the matrix subject for the purposes of dependent case assignment, it will be possible to get

---

[4]Though *I'd rather me than you* occurs as a complete utterance, it is arguably always elliptical: the syntax features a clause with a pronominal subject rather than just a pronoun in the complement of *rather*.

dependent accusative case assigned to the subject of the infinitive. In view of the fact that passivisation (with concomitant promotion of the structural accusative to subject) is independently impossible in the *rather*+infinitive construction (because *would rather* does not passivise), it is difficult to ascertain whether the case of the subject of the infinitive is structural (*i.c.*, dependent) or default.

In closing, I would like to make a few speculative remarks about the evolution and spread of the construction illustrated in (1). It seems to me likely that pairs of sentences such as the following play a major role in the development of the *rather*+ACC+INF construction:

(12) a. you would rather (that) I were more serious
      b. you would rather (that) I be more serious

In (12a), we are dealing with a subjunctive subordinate clause, whence the nominative subject, *I*. On the surface (and perhaps also in a deeper sense), the subjunctive form of the English verb is indistinct from the bare infinitive. So for the version of (12b) lacking the complementizer *that*, the complement clause is easily reanalysed as an infinitival clause. Such a reanalysis deprives the subject of that clause of its nominative case, and leads to a (default/dependent) accusative case form, as in *you would rather me be more serious* – an instantiation of the pattern in (1).

Though the negation and pronominal coreference facts reviewed above have led me to conclude that the bare infinitive embedded under *rather* is fully clausal, a logical next step in the development of the construction type would be for the infinitival constituent to be analysed as a small clause. Once this happens, we expect to be able to find bare non-verbal predication structures with an accusative subject in the complement of *would rather*. Indeed, this seems to have become a reality, judging from the occurrence of sentences such as the ones in (13a)–(13c) (with disjoint reference, *à la* (1)) and (13d) (with coreference of the matrix and embedded subjects, as in (9)):

(13) a. AirTran would rather me stinky
      b. he would rather them dead
      c. I would rather him sick now than when he is in school
      d. I would rather me sick than you

The previous paragraphs paint a preliminary picture of a construction type which, as far as I am aware, has not received detailed attention in the theoretical literature to date. It goes without saying that much more could and should be said

about *what would you rather me say?* and its ilk. I hope that the honouree of this webschrift will say that what these initial notes say is well-said. But perhaps she would rather me say just simply: Thank you very much, Liliane, for all the wonderful linguist(ic)s that you have given the world, for the innumerable ways in which you have contributed, empirically as well as theoretically, to the generative enterprise, and for all the great fun we've had.

References

Marantz, A. 1991. Case and licensing. In G.F. Westphal, B. Ao & H.R. Chae (eds.), *Proceedings of the 8th Eastern States Conference on Linguistics (ESCOL '91)*. 234–253. Columbus, OH: The Ohio State University.

Zanuttini, R. 1997. *Negation and clausal structure: A comparative study of Romance languages*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

While we're on the Subject...

Nigel Duffield

In contrast to most of the other contributors to this webschrift, I have not known Liliane Haegeman in any of the usual professional roles: she has never been my department colleague, teacher or mentor (in the obvious sense); indeed, over the years we have met in person no more than a handful of times. Yet for most of my career Liliane has been a constant familiar, guiding and supporting my efforts to understand syntax and language acquisition better than would otherwise have been possible. A 'shoulder angel' of sorts—always of the good kind. Why she ever took on this role is not something I can explain, though I suspect I'm not the only one to benefit from her altruistic advice and generosity of spirit. In gratitude, I offer the following recollection of two early occasions where her interventions were most telling. As it turns out, neither of the questions that I was trying to address received a satisfactory solution at the time. This most likely reflects failures on my part, and since these shortcomings would have gone unnoticed but for her, perhaps I shouldn't be so grateful. On the other hand—and this is the justification for this contribution—the two problems have remained something of an embarrassment for standard versions of generative theory ever since, and it seems right that they should be dusted off in her honour. With luck, this will encourage a new generation of linguists to find more imaginative solutions, or at least not reinvent the wheel.

1   Subjects, Case and Negation in Hiberno-English

Almost exactly thirty years ago, I wrote my first term paper in graduate school. Titled *A Case for Default Values*, it examined the origins of certain constructions found in Hiberno-English (HE), first brought to general attention by P. L. Henry (1977).[1] In the original paper, subsequently presented at WECOL (Duffield 1989),

---

[1]P. L. Henry is no relation of Alison Henry, as far as I'm aware. In his work, Henry (1977) uses the term Anglo-Irish, which is now generally dispreferred: see Filppula (2002), for discussion. I

the main concern was to account for the acceptability of HE examples such as those in (1) and (2) below, all of which are grammatically unacceptable in standard varieties of English (on both sides of the Atlantic):

(1) a. 'T'is an aise to the gate, they to be married.'
     b. 'T'was a loss to the country, Michael to die.'
     c. 'She to go and he to follow her, t'is the best anymore.'
     d. 'Typical,' said Morrissey, as she walked away, 'a *female* like that to spoil a funeral.'[2]

(2) a. '...surely not knowing the way, they just give him a slap or something like that and he, oh he to be afraid of the life of him.'
     b. 'D'you mind the day, and we in the old castle?'
     c. 'I heard the hens cacklin', and I went over to see what it was, and here it was a fox, and he with a hen.'

As should be clear, the theoretical interest of such sentences lies in the nominative case-marking on non-finite subjects, most evident in those examples involving pronominal subjects (1a), (1c): then and still, these sentences offer a prima facie challenge to traditional generativist assumptions linking nominative case to finiteness (Chomsky 1981, Pesetsky & Torrego 2002; cf. Szabolcsi 2009, esp. McFadden & Sundaresan 2011).[3]

The specific question I was concerned with at the time was whether the apparent 'default subject case' option had arisen in Hiberno-English through contact with Modern Irish; alternatively, whether the Hiberno-English infinitival construction was the vestige of a licensing option previously observed in 'mainland' Early Modern English. Both hypotheses are supported by circumstantial evidence. On the one hand, as discussed in Chung & McCloskey (1987), Modern Irish freely allows overt subjects in small clauses in the absence of any obvi-

---

remain indebted to Markku Filppula for giving me access to the data exemplified in (5) below.

[2] William Trevor, *Mrs Eckdorf in O'Neill's Hotel* (The Bodley Head, 1969).

[3] A different strand of the same thread, originating with Raposo (1987), linked nominative case-marking to Agreement, rather than Tense: in Raposo's work, infinitival clauses in European Portuguese were claimed to license nominative case just in case the non-finite verb was inflected for person agreement. Subsequent work by Pires (2002), mentioned in Sundaresan & McFadden (2009), shows that varieties of Brazilian Portuguese without agreement nevertheless continue to allow nominative-marked subjects; see also Longa (1994), Landau (2004). These facts lead the latter authors to conclude that person agreement is coincidental, rather than causal. However this should be analyzed, it will be clear that morphological Agreement (with or without a capital letter) is irrelevant to non-finite clauses in all varieties of Present Day English.

ous licensor—albeit these are marked with accusative, rather than nominative, case—see (3) below; on the other hand, Late Middle English and Early Modern English apparently tolerated nominative subjects in the same non-finite contexts, as evidenced by the examples in (4) from Visser (1963), see also Sundaresan & McFadden (2009).

(3)   a.   Bhuail mé leis,   agus [$_s$ é   dhá mhíle as   baile   ].
           struck I   with-him and   him.ACC 2   miles from home
           'I met him, as he was two miles from home.'

    b.   Tháinig sé isteach, agus [$_s$ é   iontach sásta leis   féin].
           came   he inside, and   him.ACC very   happy with-him self
           'He came in very happy with himself.'   (Chung & McCloskey 1987)

    c.   Is mór an suaimhneas don   gheata [$_s$ iad   a bheith
           is great the ease   to-the gate $_s$ them-ACC to be-VN
           pósta   ].
           married].
           'T'is an aise to the gate they to be married.' (Henry 1957; cf. (1a) above)

(4)   a.   I to make me blith or glad … [th]at nu mai be…   [14th C]
    b.   A king to kepe his lygis in justice, Without doute that is his offise…
           [1385]
    c.   Men to seye to women wel, it is best, And nor for to despise hem ne
           depraue.   [1402]
    d.   A preest for to freli take and chose of alle maidens to hem a wijf…was
           allowed of Poul   [1449]
    e.   Thou to love that loueth not the, is but grete foly.   [1470]
    f.   She to dy so dangerously … that was the thing that greued me so.
           [1570]

Partly due to the paucity of historical evidence, the provenance issue was not resolved, and this parochial phenomenon might have completely escaped further attention, were it not for the availability of another non-standard subject type found in (some of) the same HE varieties, namely, NPI-subjects in finite main clauses, as shown in (5):

(5)   a.   But from that day out, anyone that was on the meitheal, or anyone in the parish never said a bit t'him, or never done…made a move to have sport on him…

b. Aha. Although anybody don' seem to like to live in Russia...They're all trying to get out of it...

c. you couldn't pick a daisy but it was a sin. Now, anything is no sin...

In a follow-up conference paper, I sought to relate the grammaticality of these two constructions to a third HE anomaly, namely, the phenomenon of Singular Concord (SC) observed in Belfast English, discussed in A. M. Henry (1992, 1995), whereby plural lexical NPs in canonical position can appear with default (singular) agreement—in contrast to pronominal and/or inverted subjects, which always require plural agreement. Compare the examples in (6):

(6) a. Them eggs is cracked/*They is cracked/They are cracked.

b. Them ones wants more than them other ones/What do/*does them ones want?

Extending Henry's (1992, 1995) account of SC, it was proposed that matrix clauses in HE and Early Modern English varieties differ(ed) from Standard varieties in containing a higher functional projection (AgrP) above TP (AgrP^NegP^TP), and in allowing default case to be assigned in (non-root) Spec, TP; cf. McCloskey (2001). Given this parametric option, underspecified DPs lacking person features (6: *them eggs*) need raise no higher than TP for Case, and need not agree (*is* shows default singular agreement). Subject NPIs (5: *anyone was...*) are then licensed in virtue of having a case-marked copy within the scope of negation (Duffield 1992/1993). On this approach, the diachronic loss of nominative subjects in infinitivals in Standard English—as well as absence of the other two properties—was taken to stem from the loss of AgrP, and subsequent reanalysis of the root projection as TP, as diagrammed in (7); cf. Roberts (1993).

(7) [$_{AgrP}$ [$_{NegP}$ [$_{TP}$ [NOM] ...]]] → [$_{TP}$ [NOM] [Neg [...]]]

The analysis is undoubtedly outdated, most notably in its construal of AgrP as an autonomous functional projection, and in its appeal to Case as a licensor and as principal driver of syntactic movement to Spec, TP (Chomsky 2001, cf. Nevins 2004). Even at the time, the analysis was probably seriously flawed. Yet it did at least draw a connection between two kinds of anomalous subject that most generative researchers had totally ignored up to that point. Just as importantly from a personal point of view, the analysis apparently had sufficient merit to persuade Liliane to include it in a special issue of *Rivista di Linguistica*, on the syntax of sentential negation (Haegeman 1993). Which in turn gave me my first journal

article and—I suspect (though cannot prove)—led to my first job after graduate school.[4]

2   Pro-drop in Early Child German

If Liliane's invitation helped me into my first paid employment, as a post-doc in Harald Clahsen's LEXLERN project on child German, her support of the research begun there also helped me into the next position, at McGill.[5] Once again, the focus of this work was on anomalous subjects: this time, however, on null-subjects in German.

As is well-known—implicitly to native-speakers, explicitly to professional linguists and German language teachers—Standard German is not a *pro*-drop language: as in English, the subjects of finite clauses must be pronounced. Yet viewed from the bottom up—which is to say, from the PLD perspective of the child learner—this ban on null-subjects is quite unexpected. This is for three reasons that also distinguish German from English: first, German is a 'topic-drop' language, allowing omission of initial topics (8); second, it allows null-expletives (except in initial position) (9); finally, it has a relatively rich person-number verb-agreement paradigm, something that is often considered key to *pro*-identification; Rohrbacher (1993), cf. Bobaljik (1997).

(8) a. (Ich) hab es gestern   gekauft.
         (I)   have it yesterday bought
         'I bought it yesterday.'
     b. (Er) sagt, daß   *(er) es gestern   gekauft hat.
         (he) says, COMP (he) it yesterday bought has
         'He says he bought it yesterday.'
     c. Gestern   hab' *(ich) es gekauft.
         yesterday have (I)   it bought
         'I bought it yesterday.'

---

[4]As hard as it is to believe now, having one journal article published before completing graduate school counted as a distinguishing achievement in the early 1990s.

[5]Or it might have been my next job (University of Sheffield). The lag between initial presentation of the data at acquisition conferences in 1992-93, submission of the initial draft of the paper, hiatuses between revisions, and final publication in 2008, spanned 15 years, during which time Liliane's support both as known commentator and as anonymous reviewer proved invaluable.

(9)   a.   ... daß *ec* dem Mann das   Buch   geschenkt wurde.
          that   the. DAT   man the-.NOM book   presented
       [Biberauer 2008]
       became
       '... that the book was given to the man (as a present).
   b.   .. weil   *ec* ja   doch   Linguisten   Kammermusik
          because   MOD.PART. linguists chamber-music play
       spielen

       '... since there are linguists playing chamber music.'

So what do young German children think about null subjects? That was the focus of my two-year study in Düsseldorf, which compared the Strong Continuity/Very Early Parameter Setting claims of Rizzi (1994, 2000), Wexler (1994, 1998) and others, with the Weak Continuity/Structure Building approach of the LEXLERN project (Clahsen & Penke 1992, Clahsen et al. 1994, 1996); cf. Haegeman (1996). The two approaches to early syntax diverged most sharply on the issue of postverbal null-subjects in finite V2 clauses, termed 'Rogues' in Duffield (1992/1993, 2008): whereas Strong Continuity approaches predicted their non-occurrence—Root Infinitive subjects aside, German children should never entertain the possibility of a null-subject grammar—the Weak Continuity predicted the opposite, namely, it was expected that children should pass through a stage after the development of an underspecified AgrP (but prior to the development of CP) during which Rogues should be a grammatical option. Data from four out of six LEXLERN[6] children whose transcribed corpus data I analyzed provide rather clear support for the latter approach: not only did all of these children produce Rogues, such as those illustrated in (10), but in each case, these were only observed at significant levels within one developmental window, just before their production of finite complement clauses.

(10)   a.   Einen Strohhalm mach'   *ec* jetzt. (Matthias.22: 089)
          a-ACC straw   make-1SG   now
          'I'm making a straw now.'
   b.   So sieht   *ec* das nicht. (Katrin.07: 021)
       so see-3SG   that not
       'That way, he doesn't see it.'

---

[6]In fact, the study drew on data from three separate corpora, to which the project had access.

    c.   Die Margot hab'   *ec* gehört. (Svenja.06: 134a)
           the Margot have-1SG   heard
           'I have heard Margot.'

Once again, my interpretation may be flawed—the framework has surely been superceded, AgrP is so 1990s—but the data remain, as a thorn in the side of those who reject parametric approaches, and who discount any significant learning from the input. And once more, had it not been for Liliane's support and encouragement, these data would likely never have seen the light of (theoretical) day. Even with her help, the journey took fifteen years!

    Thus, I use this opportunity to thank Liliane for supporting research on things that shouldn't be present, but are, or should be absent, but aren't, for being so. While we are on the subject.

References

Bobaljik, J.D. 1997. If the head fits: On the morphological determination of Germanic syntax. *Linguistics* 35. 1029–1055.

Chomsky, N. 1981. *Lectures on Government and Binding: The Pisa Lectures*. Dordrecht: Foris.

Chomsky, N. 2001. Derivation by phase. In M. Kenstowicz (ed.), *Ken Hale: A life in language*. 1–52. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Chung, S. & McCloskey, J. 1987. Government, barriers, and small clauses in Modern Irish. *Linguistic Inquiry* 18. 173–237.

Clahsen, H., Eisenbeiß & Vainikka, A. 1994. The seeds of structure: A syntactic analysis of the acquisition of case marking. In T. Hoekstra & B. Schwartz (eds.), *Language acquisition studies In Generative Grammar*. 85–118. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Clahsen, H., Eisenbeiß, S. & Penke, M. 1996. Lexical learning in early syntactic development. In H. Clahsen (ed.), *Generative perspectives on language acquisition: Empirical findings, theoretical considerations and crosslinguistic comparisons*. 129–160. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Clahsen, H. & Penke, M. 1992. The acquisition of agreement morphology and its syntactic consequences: New evidence on German child language from the Simone-corpus. In J. Meisel (ed.), *The acquisition of verb placement*. 181–223. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Duffield, N. 1992/1993. Roots and rogues: Null subjects in german child language. University of Düsseldorf, McGill University.

Duffield, N. 2008. Roots and rogues in German child language. *Language Acquisition* 15. 225–269.

Filppula, M. 2002. *The grammar of Irish English: Language in Hibernian style*. London: Routledge.

Haegeman, L. 1993. Introduction to the syntax of sentential negation. *Rivista di Linguistica* 7. 183–214.

Haegeman, L. 1996. Verb second, the split CP and initial null subjects in Dutch. *GenGenP* 4. 93–120.

Henry, A. 1992. Why we don't agree: Singular concord in Belfast English. Ms., University of Ulster at Jordanstown.

Henry, A. 1995. *Belfast English and Standard English: Dialect variation and parameter setting*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Henry, P.L. 1957. *An Anglo-Irish dialect of North Roscommon*. Zurich: Aschmann & Scheller.

Henry, P.L. 1977. Anglo-Irish and its Irish background. In D. Ó Muirithe (ed.), *The English language in Ireland*. 20–36. Cork: The Mercier Press.

Landau, I. 2004. The scale of finiteness and the calculus of control. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 22. 811–877.

Longa, V.M. 1994. The galician inflected infinitive and the theory of ug. *Catalan Working Papers in Linguistics* 4. 23–44.

McCloskey, J. 2001. On the distribution of subject properties in Irish. In W.D. Davies & S. Dubinsky (eds.), *Objects and other subjects*. 157–192. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Nevins, A. 2004. Derivations without the Activity Condition. In M. McGinnis & N. Richards (eds.), *Perspectives on phases (MIT Working Papaers in Linguistics # 49)*. 287–310. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Pesetsky, D. & Torrego, E. 2002. Tense, case and the nature of syntactic categories. In J. Guéron, J. Lecarme & A. Lecarme (eds.), *The syntax of time*. 495–538. Cambridge, MA: The MIT Press.

Pires, A. 2002. Cue-based change: Inflection and subjects in the history of portuguese infinitives. In D. Lightfoot (ed.), *Syntactic effects of morphological change*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Raposo, E. 1987. Case theory and infl-to-comp: The inflected infinitive in european portuguese. *Linguistic Inquiry* 18. 85–109.

Rizzi, L. 1994. Early null subjects and root null subjects. In T. Hoekstra & B.D. Schwartz (eds.), *Language acquisition studies in generative grammar*. 151–176. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Rizzi, L. 2000. Remarks on early null subjects. In M.A. Friedemann & L. Rizzi (eds.), *The acquisition of syntax: Studies in comparative developmental linguistics*. London: Longman.

Roberts, I. 1993. *Verbs and diachronic syntax*. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Rohrbacher, B.W. 1993. *The germanic VO languages and the full paradigm: A theory of V to I raising*: University of Massachusetts Amherst dissertation.

Sundaresan, S. & McFadden, T. 2009. DP distribution and finiteness in Tamil and other languages: Selection vs. Case. *Journal of South Asian Linguistics* 2. 5–34.

Szabolcsi, A. 2009. Overt nominative subjects in infinitival complements crosslinguistically: Data, diagnostics, and preliminary analyses. *NYU Working Papers in Linguistics: Papers in Syntax* 2. `http://as.nyu.edu/content/nyu-as/as/departments/linguistics/graduate/nyu-working-papers-in-linguistics.html#vol2`.

Visser, F.T. 1963. *An historical syntax of the english language*. Leiden: E.J. Brill.

Wexler, K. 1994. Optional infinitives, head movement and the economy of derivations. In D.W. Lightfoot & N. Hornstein (eds.), *Verb movement*. 305–350. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Wexler, K. 1998. Very early parameter-setting and the Unique Checking Constraint: A new explanation of the optional infinitive stage. *Lingua* 106. 23–79.

Some thoughts on the early Dutch null subject

Maria Teresa Guasti

Between the age of 2;0-3;6, children speaking non-pro drop languages (English, Flemish, French, Danish) omit the sentential subject from their sentences. This occurs more often if the verb is nonfinite, but it occurs with average percentages that go from about 50% to 20% in finite sentences as well. For example, a French-speaking child could utter (1).

(1)   est trop gros
        (he) is   too big
        (Philippe, 2;2)

Italian-speaking children also omit the sentential subject, but this is not surprising since their grammar allows it. Dutch-speaking children omit the sentential subject. Although this should not surprise, as topic drop is licit in the target language, Haegeman (1995) has challenged the claim that children's omissions were target-consistent and has convincingly shown that these omissions had to be put in the same basket as subject omissions in English, French. She has claimed that the early null subject of Dutch-speaking children is a root phenomenon. She has shown that omission occurs from matrix, but not from embedded clauses, that is, subject omission is limited to declarative sentences and non-existent in *wh*-questions. However, these properties characterize Dutch topic drop as well. To support her claim, Haegeman has provided data showing that subject omission in early Dutch decreases between 2;0 and 3;0 years and this decrease parallels that of root infinitives, another phenomenon observed in the early grammar of children speaking a wide varieties of languages. On this basis, she argues that the early Dutch null subject is a developmental phenomenon that fades away as children's grow older and their cognitive resources increase. Specifically, Haegeman, following Rizzi (1994), has proposed that Dutch-speaking children were applying clausal truncation to their sentences and produced null

114

subjects in the Spec of the root. She has also shown that this phenomenon is not only present in child Dutch, but in diaries written by several well renowned adult writers (Haegeman 1990, Weir 2012), although adults' null subjects may be different from children's ones. Thus, in omitting the root subject children were exercising an option available in Universal Grammar. Of course in the case of writers, it is not short of cognitive resources that is behind the phenomenon, but something else.

The phenomenon of subject omission has been extensively investigated since Hyams (1986), but mostly in non-null subject or non-drop languages, with some exceptions. When the productions of children exposed to null subject or topic drop languages have been examined, it were to show that subject omission by these children were qualitatively and quantitatively different from those of children exposed to a language where omission was not target consistent. One example is Wang et al. (1992). Mandarin is a topic drop language, whereby both subjects and objects can be dropped under appropriate contextual conditions. Wang et al. (1992) have shown that Mandarin speaking children drop subjects and objects 46% and 22% of the time, respectively, at 3;0 years of age. Their English-speaking peers do so much less, especially for objects, i.e., 33% and 4%. It is clear that these figures tell us that the null subject phenomenon in child Mandarin and in child English emanates from different grammatical sources. An important and disregarded finding from Wang et al. (1992)'s paper is that Mandarin-speaking children omit in a similar way as adults, as far as the asymmetry subject vs. object is concerned. Adults drop subjects more often than objects, i.e., 36% and 10%, respectively. However, looking at Wang et al. (1992)'s data, we can observe that during children's development there is a decrease in null subjects: subjects are omitted 56% around age 2;0, 46% around age 3;0 and 38% around age 4. In other words, it is around age 4;0 that children's subject drop and adult subject drop quantitatively matches, as already observed in Guasti (2017). Wang et al. (1992) did not look systematically at the pragmatic conditions of subject drop. They merely say that "the null subject was sometimes clearly related to an antecedent. . . In other cases, the referent of the null subject was not previously mentioned in the discourse, although it was usually understandable from context"(Wang et al. 1992: 233). Therefore, we can infer that most of the time the use was appropriate, but a more systematic analysis would have been appropriate.

A developmental decrease in subject omission is also observed in early null subject languages. Valian (1991) reports that Italian adults omit the sentential subject 64% of the time. Serratrice (2005) shows that, across four MLU stages,

omission of the the sentential subject decreases from 80% to 65%. At the same time, she also demonstrates that Italian-speaking children from their earliest multiword productions (around age 2;0) are sensitive to the pragmatic constraints regulating subject omission (e.g., informativeness). They omit more 1st and 2nd person subjects than 3rd person subject, as the former are always recoverable from context. They use overt subjects when it is needed because the antecedent is not easily recoverable. However, we when look at the quantitative data she provides, we realize that there is a certain amount of null subjects whose use is not accounted for by her pragmatic constraints and in fact she recognizes that "…although children are sensitive to discourse-pragmatic features in their choice of referential expressions, this sensitivity becomes more fine-tuned over time" (Serratrice 2005: 457).

These findings invite us to think that subject omission in early Dutch (and in early Italian as well) conceals two phenomena: the phenomenon found in other early non-topic drop or non-null subject languages and the adult topic drop option, as proposed in Guasti (2017). This would reconcile Hageman's claim that Dutch-speaking children are using the option exploited by English-speaking children with the claim by de Haan & Tuijnman 1988 and Verrips & Weissenborn 1992 that children are using the adult topic drop option. To further explore this hypothesis, one would also need to look more closely at the features of topic drop in spoken Dutch. Trift (2003), through a judgement experiment with Dutch-speaking adults, has shown that dropping 1st person subjects is more tolerated than dropping 2nd and 3rd person subject. One may wonder if this is the case in early Dutch. Some other similar insights come from work by Frazier. Based on adult data, Frazier (2015) has proposed a view that is different from that taken here. Acccording to her, subject omission is not a grammatical option, as assumed in Haegeman (1995), but it is due to a performance error that occurs when the subject is highly predictable. She bases her claim on an experiment carried out by Mack et al. (2012) combined with a second experiment she carried out. In the first experiment, English-speaking adults heard mini-dialogues, in which the final sentence had a 1st or 3rd person subject, and either it was in the present or past tense. The subject was degraded, so that it was not clear whether it was pronounced or not. Adults were invited to repeat the sentence. It was found that they restored the unheard subject more often with a 3rd person than with a 1st person verb and more often in the past than in the present tense. In the second experiment, the same result was obtained with non-sense verbs, supporting the conclusion that the phenomenon is not lexically driven. Frazier interpreted these findings as evidence that adults expect a subject and restore it more often

in certain conditions than in others, specifically they restore it when it is less predictable. Frazier only used sentences with possible root null subjects. Therefore, we cannot establish whether the accepted null subjects (i.e., those not restored) emanate from a grammar that allows the root null subject or is really the expression of a speech error, as Frazier claims. It would be interesting to extend Frazier' study to contexts with highly predictable subjects in *wh*-questions or embedded questions to establish whether adults restore the subject more often in these contexts than in root contexts, as our grammatical approach would suggest. It would also be interesting to see what children would do in these same contexts, if the experiment is feasible. This would give us some insights not only into their syntactic knowledge, but also into their pragmatic knowledge.

In conclusion, I have attempted to reconcile two opposing views concerning subject omission in early Dutch and suggested that Dutch-speaking children know that their grammar allows topic drop, but at the same time they exercise another option found in other grammars. Second, I have suggested a new path of investigation which is concerned with the pragmatics of null subjects, i.e., the conditions that lead speakers of non-null subject grammars to tolerate omission.

References

Frazier, L. 2015. Do null subject sentences (mis-)trigger pro-drop grammars? *Journal of Psycholinguistic Research* 44. 669–674.

Guasti, M.T. 2017. *Language acquisition*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press. (2nd edition).

de Haan, G.J. & Tuijnman, K. 1988. Missing subjects and objects in child grammar. In P. Jordens & J. Lalleman (eds.), *Language development*. 101–122. Dordrecht: Foris.

Haegeman, L. 1990. Non-overt subjects in diary contexts. In J. Mascaró & M. Nespor (eds.), *Grammar in progress. GLOW essays for Henk van Riemsdijk*. 167–174. Dordrecht: Foris.

Haegeman, L. 1995. Root infinitives, tense, and truncated structures in Dutch. *Language Acquisition* 4(3). 205–255.

Hyams, N.M. 1986. *Language acquisition and the theory of parameters*. Dordrecht: D. Reidel Publishing Company.

Mack, J., Clifton, C.J., Frazier, L. & Taylor, P.V. 2012. Pragmatic constraints influence the restoration of optional subjects. *Journal of Memory and Language* 67(1). 211–223.

Rizzi, L. 1994. Early null subjects and root null subjects. In T. Hoekstra & B.D. Schwartz (eds.), *Language acquisition studies in generative grammar*. 151–176. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Serratrice, L. 2005. The role of discourse pragmatics in the acquisition of subjects in Italian. *Applied Psycholinguistics* 26(3). 437–462.

Trift, K.E. 2003. *Object drop in the L1 acquisition of Dutch*. Leiden: LOT.

Valian, V. 1991. Syntactic subjects in the early speech of American and Italian children. *Cognition* 40. 21–81.

Verrips, M. & Weissenborn, J. 1992. Routes to verb placement in early German and French: The independence of finiteness and agreement. In J.M. Meisel (ed.), *The acquisition of verb placement: Functional categories and V2 phenomena in language acquisition*. 283–331. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Wang, Q., Lillo-Martin, D., Best, C.T. & Levitt, A. 1992. Null subject versus null object: Some evidence from acquisition of Chinese and English. *Language Acquisition* 2. 221–254.

Weir, A. 2012. Left edge deletion in English and subject omission in diaries. *English Language and Linguistics* 16(1). 105–29.

Negative concord and Old English clause structure: some afterthoughts

Eric Haeberli[*]

1   Introduction

Old English (OE) has word order properties that are reminiscent of the modern West Germanic asymmetric Verb Second (V2) languages like Dutch or German. In main clauses, the finite verb tends to occur towards the beginning of the clause whereas placement towards the end of the clause is common in subordinate clauses. To capture this similarity, van Kemenade (1988) proposes that OE can be structurally analysed like modern West Germanic. In basic X-bar theoretic terms, this means that the finite verb moves to C in main clauses while it stays in T in a head-final TP in subordinate clauses.[1] However, it has been shown in subsequent work that there is evidence for head-initial structure in subordinate clauses and that therefore the headedness of TP may be variable in OE. Different types of evidence have been put forward to support the hypothesis that the verb can occur in a head-initial projection in subordinate clauses, with the main data being related to the distribution of particles, pronouns, stranded prepositions

---

[1]For simplicity's sake, I will refer to structures here that include head-final projections. However, this choice is not likely to substantially affect the main points made in this paper. My main focus will be an empirical generalization on OE and West Flemish syntax, and, as far as I can tell, there are no obvious advantages or disadvantages in capturing this generalization in terms of an approach that includes head-final structure and one that bans them (cf. Haeberli & Haegeman 1995: 103-107) for some discussion).

and negative objects (Pintzuk 1993, 1999, 2005) and to Negative Concord readings (Haeberli & Haegeman 1995). In this paper, I will reconsider the evidence from Negative Concord by adding some quantitative data and by examining relevant word orders in light of the most recent proposals that have been made with respect to the structural analysis of OE.

2 OE subordinate clause syntax

In OE subordinate clauses, the finite verb frequently occurs at the end of the clause. This is shown in (1).

(1)   swilce he wið his dohtor   sume digle   spæce sprecan wolde
        as   he with his daughter some secret speech speak   would
        'as he would speak some secret speech with this daughter' (coapollo,ApT:1.10.10)

In (1), the finite auxiliary is preceded by the subject pronoun, a PP, an object, and a non-finite main verb. Both clauses can be analysed by assuming that the subject is in SpecTP, the finite verbal element in a head-final T and the other constituent(s) in the complement of T. As van Kemenade (1988) already points out, however, the finite verb is not always in final position in OE subordinate clauses. This is illustrated in (2).

(2)   a.   þæt ic mihte [God forbeodan]
              that I could God forbid
              'that I could forbid God'
              (coaelive,+ALS[Peter's_Chair]:186.2398)
        b.   ðæt se reccere ða ðeawas & ða unðeawas cunne [wel
              that the teacher the virtues & the vices   can   well
              toscadan]
              distinguish
              'that the teacher can distinguish virtues and vices well'
              (cocura,CP:20.149.16.1019)

In (2), the finite auxiliary is followed by the non-finite main verb and its complement (2a) or an adjunct (2b). Given cases like those in (2), van Kemenade (1988) proposes a range of rightward movements for OE that derive word orders in which the finite verb is not at the end of the clause. For example the

subordinate clauses in (2) can be argued to involve movement of the bracketed constituent from the left of the auxiliary to the right, a process that has been referred to as Verb Projection Raising (VPR) in the literature on varieties of modern West Germanic.

If, in (2b), the subject is in SpecTP and the finite auxiliary in T, an analysis in terms of VPR seems to be inevitable. The word order in (2a), however, could be derived either through VPR or simply through a head-initial TP structure in which T selects a head-final VP to its right. Strong evidence for the availability of the latter option, i.e. head-initial TP, in OE is provided by Pintzuk (1993, 1999, 2005). Her approach is to look at clauses that must clearly be head-final and then to examine what types of elements can and cannot undergo rightward movement in such clauses. Under the assumption that with a head-initial TP only one XP position is available before the verb in T (i.e. SpecTP), Pintzuk considers those subordinate clauses as unambiguously head-final in which at least two heavy constituents precede the finite verb. Focusing only on such clauses, Pintzuk identifies several elements that can generally not occur to the right of the verb: particles, object pronouns, stranded prepositions and negative object. But in subordinate clauses with a single constituent before the finite verb, these elements do occur after the verb. Pintzuk therefore concludes that particles, object pronouns, stranded prepositions and negative objects are diagnostic elements for head-initial structure. Since the diagnostic elements cannot undergo rightward movement in unambiguously head-final clauses, their occurrence to the right of the verb must be the sign of a head-initial TP structure. Pintzuk therefore proposes that OE shows variation with respect to directionality: TP can be both head-initial and head-final (the double base hypothesis).

3   Negative Concord and OE clause structure

Haeberli & Haegeman (1995) (henceforth HH) provide independent cross- linguistically based evidence in favour of Pintzuk's hypothesis that head-initial TP structure can be found in OE. HH's argument is similar to Pintzuk's as it is based on a phenomenon that does not seem to be possible with head-final structure, but nevertheless occurs in OE subordinate clauses. The empirical domain that HH consider is Negative Concord (NC), the phenomenon whereby two or more negative elements in a clause do not cancel each other out but together express a single negation.

HH's starting point is an observation made by Haegeman (1995) for West

Flemish (WF). WF has an asymmetric V2 syntax with verb-final subordinate clauses comparable to Dutch and German. But in contrast to those languages, WF also has VPR and productive NC. An illustration of NC is given in (3) (from Haegeman 1995: 133):

(3) da   Valère an niemand niets   nie gezeid oat
     that Valère to nobody   nothing not said   has
     'that Valère had not said anything to anyone'

What is of interest for our purposes now is that a negative constituent contained within a VP that has undergone VPR cannot enter an NC relation with an element outside this VP. I will refer to this generalisation with the label *NC-VPR. It is illustrated in (4), where only the Double Negation reading is possible.

(4) dan-ze   niemand nie willen niets   zeggen
     that-they nobody   not want   nothing say
     'that they do not want to say nothing to anyone' (Double Negation)
     '*that they do not want to say anything to anyone' (NC)

As HH point out, *NC-VPR makes an interesting prediction for OE. Like WF, OE is a NC language. Sentential negation is expressed by the preverbal negative marker *ne*, which can co-occur with one or more other negative elements (three in (5)) to express a single negation.

(5) þe   næfre nan man ne   geseah ær   on nanum lande
     that never no man not saw   before in no   land
     'that no man has ever seen before in any land'
     (cootest,Exod:34.10.3577)

The prediction then is the following: If *NC-VPR also holds in OE and NC is not possible with a negative element occurring inside a VP that has undergone VPR, the configuration 'Neg1-Aux-Neg2-V' with an NC reading should only be found with clauses that can be analysed as involving head-initial TP as the relevant word order could be obtained without VPR in such cases. As for clauses which must be analysed in terms of a head-final TP, NC readings with a negative element between the finite auxiliary and the non-finite main verb should be ungrammatical and therefore not be found in OE.

   HH claim that this prediction is largely borne out. Clearly head-final subordinate clauses with VPR generally do not have a negative element in the VP moved to the right. However, HH identify eight examples that could potentially be prob-

lematic. They propose an analysis for six of them and speculate on the status of the remaining two. Overall, HH conclude that *NC-VPR also seems to hold in OE, and that the regular occurrence of the order 'Neg1 Aux Neg2 V' can be related to head-initial TP, confirming Pintzuk's double base hypothesis.

In the remainder of this paper, I briefly re-evaluate HH's conclusions for two main reasons. First, HH do not provide any quantitative evidence. This weakens their claims somewhat as a crucial part of their argument is based on the hypothesized ungrammaticality of an option in OE (NC with VPR in clearly head-final clauses). Ungrammaticalities can never be conclusively established in corpus data, but quantitative evidence is useful in that the likelihood that the absence of an option in a corpus is a sign of ungrammaticality increases with the number of examples in which this option could have occurred but did not. A second reason for reconsidering HH's observations is that more work on OE syntax has been carried out over the last 20 years, and we may wonder what the status of the examples that HH have identified as potentially problematic is within more recent analyses of OE.

3.1 *NC-VPR: Quantitative evidence

My first goal is to provide a quantitative analysis of the interaction between NC and VPR. In contrast to HH, who used A Microfiche Concordance to Old English (Healey & Venezky 1980), I will base myself on the YCOE (Taylor et al. 2003). The main issue I will consider is the following: Under the assumption that *NC-VPR holds for OE as it does for WF, HH propose that all subordinate clauses of the type 'Neg1-Aux-Neg2-V' must be the result of head-initial TP. We therefore get the following prediction P that needs to be tested quantitatively:

(6)   P: The sequence 'Neg1-Aux-Neg2-V' does not occur in clearly head-final clauses in OE.

With respect to defining "clearly head-fina", I will start with the minimal and most constrained hypothesis (but cf. section 3.2 below for some further discussion). In a head-initial structure, the finite auxiliary is under T and the subject is in SpecTP. The minimal assumption is therefore that they are adjacent. Thus, head-final structure is required if one or more constituents intervene between the subject and the finite auxiliary.

In order to test P, I have collected all OE subordinate clauses containing a finite auxiliary, a non-finite main verb and at least two negative items. In all cases,

one of the negative items is the preverbal negative marker *ne*, which can express negation on its own and is generally analysed as a prefix on the finite verb. An NC relation is then established between ne and one or more additional negative elements in the clause. Overall, there are 631 clauses that meet the requirements described before. However, not all of them are equally relevant for testing P. In 146 clauses, the second negative element is the subject occurring in SpecTP. In these cases, a violation of *NS-VPR would not have been possible as the subject in SpecTP could not have been included in a VP undergoing VPR.

This leaves us with 475 clauses containing *ne* plus one or more negative non-subject XPs. But once again, not all of these could have given rise to a violation of *NS-VPR. For that to be possible, there has to be one additional non-subject constituent which could intervene between the subject position and the auxiliary and thus indicate clear head-final structure. Focusing then on all subordinate clauses that contain a negated auxiliary, a non-finite main verb, at least one negative non-subject XP, and at least one other non-subject XP[2], we are left with 266 clauses that could potentially have given rise to a violation of *NC-VPR if the four elements had been placed in the order 'XP-*ne*Aux-NegYP-V'.

Thus, the pool of examples that allow us to test P is relatively substantial. If we now examine it for the occurrence of 'XP-*ne*Aux-NegYP-V' order, we can find 14 clauses of this type coming from 10 different texts. An illustration is given in (7).

(7)   þæt hy   æt necstan ne   magon nan land geseon.
        that they at last   not can   no land see
        'that finally they cannot see any land'
        (cogregdH,GDPref_1_[H]:5.20.34)

The 14 examples of the type shown in (7) correspond to 5.3% of the 266 clauses identified above and to 14.3% of all clauses with the order '*ne*Aux-NegYP-V' (n = 98; XP occurs in a position other than to the immediate left of *ne*V in the remaining 85.7%). Although these frequencies are low, they are high enough to raise some initial doubts as to whether *NC-VPR can indeed be maintained for OE.

A possible account emerges if we take a closer look at these 14 potentially problematic examples. In 7 of these, the subject is a pronoun, and in the remain-

---

[2]Not included here are object pronouns and subordinate clauses. The former are not likely to be diagnostics for head-final structure as they very frequently intervene between the subject and the finite verb. As for the latter, they do generally not occur between the subject and the finite verb even in clearly head-final contexts.

ing 7, there is no overt subject in SpecTP because of subject movement (relative clauses) or because of subject omission in a second conjunct. If we focus on clauses with full DP subjects only, the result is clear-cut. Among 54 clauses with a DP subject, a negated auxiliary, a non-finite main verb, one negative YP and at least one other XP, there is not a single one that has the order 'Su-XP-*ne*Aux-NegYP-V'.[3] Although the amount of data allowing us to test P with full DP subjects is not huge, the fact that 54 clauses would have the potential ingredients to violate *NC-VPR but do not do so is nevertheless suggestive. HH's conclusion is therefore supported if an analysis for the 14 clauses with a pronominal subject or no overt subject can be given in terms of a head-initial TP structure.

3.2 *NC-VPR: Apparent counterexamples

HH also identify examples with subject pronouns as the main source of potential counterarguments against *NC-VPR in OE. They suggest that subject pronouns can cliticize to C and that the element intervening between the subject and the finite auxiliary in an example like (7) either occupies SpecTP (following Pintzuk's (1993, 1999) hypothesis that OE is a symmetric V2 language with SpecTP as a topic position) or is fronted through Stylistic Fronting. None of these assumptions is uncontroversial, however. There is no evidence suggesting that OE subject pronouns are true head clitics, the status of OE as a symmetric V2 language has generally not been accepted in the literature, and whether there are independent reasons for postulating a process of Stylistic Fronting is by no means certain.

In terms of recent approaches to the clausal syntax of OE, however, most apparent counterexamples to *NC-VPR can be accounted for quite straightforwardly. It has been widely assumed in the literature that above TP there is a second projection hosting subjects in the OE clause structure. Different labels have been given to this projection by different authors. But what is common to all these analyses is the assumption that subject pronouns always move to the higher subject position whereas full DP subjects generally occur in the lower one but can occasionally also move higher. The relevant part of the clause structure is shown in (8), which is based on the most recent version of this approach (Walkden 2017).

---

[3]Interestingly, Haeberli & Haegeman (1995: 100, ex. 29b)) cite such a case, but the relevant text is not included in the YCOE. Cf. fn. 5 below for a further observation concerning this example.

(8) $[_{CP2}$ XP C2 ... $[_{CP1}$ SU1(pro/DP) C1 $[_{TP}$ SU2(DP) T]]]

Walkden uses the label CP1 for the higher host of subjects, where CP1 combines the features Fin and Fam (familiar Topic) of a split CP structure. It is the Fam feature on C1 which triggers the systematic movement of subject pronouns to SpecCP1. For subordinate clauses, it can be assumed that the complementizer is merged in C1 but then raises to C2. With C1 containing a copy of the complementizer, the finite verb cannot move to C1 and remains in T. Together with the assumption that adjuncts can occur between CP1 and TP (cf. e.g. Haeberli 2000, van Kemenade & Los 2006), we get the result that 'Su-adjunct-V' orders or 'adjunct-V' orders with a no overt subject can be derived even if TP is head-initial (cf. Haeberli & Ihsane 2016: 506).[4] An example like (7) can thus be analysed with a head-initial structure and without reference to VPR:[5]

(9) $[_{CP2}$ þæt $[_{CP1}$ hy þæt [æt necstan] $[_{TP}$ hy $[_{T'}$ $[_T$ ne magon] $[_{VP}$ nan land geseon]

13 of the 14 potential counterexamples identified earlier can be analyzed along these lines as they involve AdvPs or PPs. The only example that remains problematic is the following:

(10)   þæt wæs ða ða he Iudeas nolde nan wuht læran hwæt hi don scolden
         that was when he Jews not-wanted no whit advise what they do should
         'that was when he didn't want to advise the Jews what to do'
         (cocura,CP:58.443.3.3159)

Here an argument occurs between the subject pronoun and the negated auxil-

---

[4]van Kemenade & Los (2006) suggest that the position between CP1 and TP is a position for discourse particles such as þa or þonne ('then'). In the 14 examples with 'XP-*ne*Aux-NegYP-V' order, there are indeed three in which þonne occurs in the XP position. However, Haeberli & Ihsane (2016: 506) show that other items can be found in this position as well (possibly as the result of movement) and that more than one item can occur there at the same time. I will assume here that the XP position is open to any type of adjunct, including PPs, but that it may initially have been a particle position, the use of which was extended over time.

[5]Note that, according to (8), a structure like (9) would also be possible with a full DP subject. More precisely, if, as Walkden's analysis suggests, Fam is the crucial feature attracting subject pronouns to CP1, one would expect a familiar non-pronominal DP also to be able to occur in CP1. This is indeed what could be argued for the example mentioned in fn. 3 above. The relevant subject has a demonstrative determiner ('these') and refers to an entity that has already been mentioned in the same paragraph a few lines before. However, given that full DP subjects tend to remain in SpecTP, the rarity of such a word order (absent in the YCOE) would be expected.

iary. Iudeas cannot be argued to be a familiar topic as the referent is not mentioned before, so movement to CP1 is not an option. The only options seem to be that the adjunct position between CP1 and TP can occasionally be targeted by an argument, or alternatively that TP allows multiple specifiers. It is not entirely clear how the viability of these options could be tested and I will therefore have to leave this issue open.

4   Conclusion

HH put forward an argument in favour of the occurrence of head-initial structure in OE (or its equivalent in a system without variation in directionality) that is based on the syntax of NC and more specifically on the observation from WF that NC is not possible for a negative constituent contained within a VP that has undergone VPR to the right of an auxiliary and that therefore sequences of the type 'Neg1-Aux-Neg2-V' must involve head-initial structure. In this paper, I have evaluated HH's claims on the basis of a detailed quantitative analysis and recent theoretical proposals. Among 631 subordinate clauses with at least two negative elements, a finite auxiliary and a non-finite main verb, there is only a single one (0.2%; example 10) that cannot be straightforwardly accounted for in terms of HH's hypothesis and recent analyses of the clausal syntax of OE. Even if we define the set of relevant examples in a more restrictive way, the frequency of exceptions remains extremely low. If we look at all subordinate clauses in which a violation of *NC-VPR could have occurred (clauses with an additional XP), we get a proportion of 1 out of 266 (0.4%). Or if we focus only on clauses with Aux-Neg-V' order and one additional XP, the rate is 1 out of 98 (1.0%). Even though the complete absence of potentially problematic cases would have been preferable, the highly exceptional status of example (10) suggests that the argument for a head-initial inflectional projection put forward by HH stands up to close quantitative and updated theoretical scrutiny.

References

Haeberli, E. 2000. Adjuncts and the syntax of subjects in Old and Middle English. In S. Pintzuk, G. Tsoulas & A.R. Warner (eds.), *Diachronic syntax: Models and mechanisms*. 109–131. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Haeberli, E. & Haegeman, L. 1995. Clause structure in Old English: Evidence from negative concord. *Journal of Linguistics* 31. 81–108.

Haeberli, E. & Ihsane, T. 2016. Revisiting the loss of verb movement in the history of English. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 34. 497–452.

Haegeman, L. 1995. *The syntax of negation*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Healey, A.d.P. & Venezky, R.L. 1980. *A microfiche concordance to Old English*. Toronto: Pontifical Institute of Medieval Studies.

van Kemenade, A. 1988. *Syntactic case and morphological case in the history of English*. Dordrecht: Foris.

van Kemenade, A. & Los, B. 2006. Discourse adverbs and clausal syntax in Old and Middle English. In A. van Kemenade & B. Los (eds.), *The handbook of the history of English*. 224–248. Oxford: Blackwell.

Pintzuk, S. 1993. Verb seconding in Old English: Verb movement to Infl. *The Linguistic Review* 10. 5–35.

Pintzuk, S. 1999. *Phrase structures in competition: variation and change in Old English*. New York: Garland.

Pintzuk, S. 2005. Arguments against a universal base: evidence from Old English. *English Language and Linguistics* 9. 115–138.

Taylor, A., Warner, A., Pintzuk, S. & Beths, F. 2003. *The York-Toronto-Helsinki parsed corpus of Old English prose*. York: Department of Linguistics, University of York. `http://www-users.york.ac.uk/~lang22/YcoeHome1.htm`.

Mapping the speaker's mind

Virginia Hill

In this squib I share some thoughts about issues that need further investigation when it comes to the mapping of conversational pragmatics. In particular, based on my work with Liliane, I will point out some problems with the cartography of evaluative, evidential and epistemic modals, for which I have no solution to suggest at this time.

Haegeman & Hill (2013) and Haegeman (2014) argue for the mapping of speech acts in a separate field above ForceP (as defined in Rizzi 1997, 2004), which roughly yields the hierarchy SAP > ForceP. Vocative phrases and injunctive particles are examples of items that merge directly in the SAP area. This approach entails that the speech act field is a root clause phenomenon, since embedding occurs only at the level of ForceP and/or lower structure (i.e., assuming that the clause typing feature located in Force is the goal of the selection probe).

However, speech acts are not the only syntactic manifestations of speaker's point of view. As argued in Cinque (1999), speech act modality is at the highest level of a hierarchy that further maps the speaker's mind, as in (1), where other modal phrases capture evaluations, evidentiality and epistemicity, to which I will refer as the *E-modal complex*.

(1) $Mood_{speech\ act} > Mood_{eval} > Mood_{evid} > Mod_{epistemic} > TP$

It is unclear how (1) can be converted to the cartographies of the left periphery proposed in Haegeman & Hill (2013), or in Rizzi (1997, 2004); see also Kidwai (2010) for a consideration of similar questions. Does the E-modal complex belong to SAP or to ForceP? The answer has consequences for understanding and delimiting the root clause phenomena.

There are already studies on the status of the E-complex, which aim to define the location of the relevant adverbs. In this sense, Haegeman (2010) points out that certain configurations, such as root and selected clauses, are more favourable to speech act adverbs and the E-modal complex, insofar as they avoid intervention effects, such as noticed with adverbial and conditional clauses.

While this is true, there is also evidence that the distribution of E-adverbs is not clear cut even when they merge in root and selected clauses. For example, the English adverb *clearly* and the Romanian counterpart *evident* may occur either above the Force complementizer, as in (2a) and (3a), or lower, as in (2b) and (3b). The evidential interpretation is the same in either position.

(2)   a.   ***Clearly* that**, for whatever reason, the information wasn't getting through on the ground. (from Radford 2013)
       b.   Tolkien's way of thinking ***clearly*** spoke deeply to Lewis.
             (McGrath 2013: 150)

(3)   a.   ***Evident* că**   pe   Maria cu   avionul   o vom   trimite (nu cu
             clearly   that DOM Maria with plane.the her-will.1PL send   not with
             trenul).
             train.the
             'Clearly, we'll send Maria by plane, not by train.'
       b.   Pe   Maria o vom   trimite ***evident*** cu   avionul,   nu   cu
             DOM Maria her-will.1PL send   clearly   with plane.the not with
             trenul.
             train.the
             'Clearly, we'll send Maria by plane, not by train.'

In (2a) and (3a), the adverb precedes not only the complementizer but also topic and focus constituents, which makes very unlikely an analysis that would locate the complementizer lower than Force (e.g., in Fin, as in Radford 2013 versus Force in Hill 2007). The point is that the versions in (2b), (3b) are embeddable under selection, whereas the versions in (2a), (3a) are not, as further shown in (4). Note that the evidential has a speaker oriented reading in (4a)-(4c), while in (4b)-(4d) the reading can be either speaker oriented or subject oriented. Crucially, the speaker oriented reading is not lost.

(4)   a.   *He wrote that ***clearly* that**, for whatever reason, the information…
       b.   He wrote that, for whatever reason, the information ***clearly*** wasn't getting through.
       c.   *Ne-a   scris   că   ***evident* că**   pe   Maria cu   avionul   au
             to.us-has written that clearly   that DOM Maria with plane.the have
             trimis-o.
             sent-her

d. Ne-a   scris   că pe Maria au   trimis-o ***evident*** cu
   to.us-has written that DOM Maria have sent-her clearly   with
   avionul.
   plane.the
   'He wrote to us that they clearly sent Maria by plane.'

Such data are challenging for the current cartographic analyses, since it is not clear where the E-features are mapped (i.e., on SA, Force/Fin or T?).

This is not a problem only for cartographic analyses. Heavily semantic based analyses also fail to grasp the contrast in (4). For example, Krifka (2017) argues that the distinctions between the aspects involved in an assertion are not only semantic but also syntactically mapped. This is not a new idea for those working in cartography (it is, in fact, the driving principle for the development of clausal hierarchies since Rizzi 1997), but it receives novel semantic justification. Importantly, Krifka (2017) proposes a separate syntactic mapping of the semantic distinctions, as shown in (5). For a more detailed discussion of (5) see Frey (2018) and subsequent work.

(5)   ActP > CmP/JP > TP

In (5), TP is the domain of the proposition, where the truth-value is established, and which would roughly correspond to ForceP in cartography (i.e., it includes contrastive focus). Beyond TP, we deal with non-at-issueness. JP (which stands for *judgment phrase*) and CmP (*commitment phrase*) is the area where main clause operations take place (e.g., merging E-adverbs, E-related discourse particles, contrastive left dislocation). ActP (*speech act phrase*) also contains elements that qualify as main clause phenomena, but occur more peripherally (e.g., Hanging Topic, illocutionary particles, question tags).

In this framework, a clause is built bottom-up and may vary as to the level attained beyond TP: the presence of elements relevant to speech acts triggers the clausal projection up to ActP, while, in the absence of such elements, the derivation may stop either at CmP/JP (if material with features relevant to this domain is present in the clause), or at TP, if there is no appropriate trigger for the projection of the not-at-issue area.

Crucially, the derivation in (5) predicts that the different levels have a different distribution, a hypothesis presently explored (and confirmed) for German in Frey (2018). For example, Frey points out that a question tag can only appear with an ActP, and when this ActP is adjunct, it falls outside the structure of the

clause it relates to, as shown in (6a) versus (6b).

(6) a. *[Weil Maria sehr begabt   ist, hab   ich recht], wird sie schnell
         since Maria very talented is   have I   right   will   she quickly
         promovieren.
         graduate
     b. Maria wird schnell promovieren, [ist sie doch sehr begabt, hab
         Maria will   quickly graduate   is   she MP   very talented have
         ich recht?]
         I   right
         'Maria will quickly graduate, she is is very talented, isn't she?'

Along the same lines, a discourse particle like *ja* in (7b) demands that its host be at least a JP. JP has to be attached high in its host, therefore binding into an adverbial clause which contains a discourse particle is not possible.

(7) a. Weil   er$_1$ sehr erschrocken ist, wurde jeder$_1$ bleich.
         because he very frightened   was became everyone pale
         'Because they were frightened, everybody turned pale.'
     b. *Weil   er$_1$ ja   sehr erschrocken ist, wurde jeder$_1$ bleich.
         because he PART very frightened   was became everyone pale

    Romanian brings independent confirmation for the hierarchy in (5), since the complementizer *că* 'that', obligatory with declarative complement clauses, may also occur, optionally, at the border between the fields above TP. For example, in (8), the speech act adverb 'frankly' and the promissive particle *zău*, which qualify as elements of ActP, embed a 'that' headed JP field containing the adverb 'surely', which further embeds a 'that' headed TP, the entire structure qualifying as a root clause (see Hill 2007 for tests verifying the mono-clausal versus bi-clausal status of such structures).

(8) Cinstit zău (că) bineînțeles (că) voi   sosi   la timp.
     frankly PRT that surely   that will.1SG arrive in time
     'Frankly, I will surely arrive in time.'

So the sentence in (8) supports the field separations in (5) by showing the possibility of 'that' insertion in-between these fields. However, the sentence in (8) is unembeddable, as shown in (9), either as a complement or as an adjunct, as long as its level is ActP or JP, a conclusion that also follows, on independent grounds,

from cartographic analyses.

(9) a. *A promis că cinstit zău (că) bineînțeles (că) va sosi la
         has promised that frankly PRT that surely that will.3SG arrive in
         timp.
         time
     b. *Deși cinstit zău (că) bineînțeles (că) va sosi la timp...
         although frankly PRT that surely that will.3SG arrive in time

However, if we eliminate the ActP elements, we can get embedding on the con-
dition that the E-adverb is somewhere lower in the structure (i.e., *că* is ruled out),
as in (10). As mentioned for (4), embedding, as in (10a), allows for a double read-
ing, where the E-adverb may reflect either the point of view of the speaker or of
the grammatical subject (under a reportative structure), depending on the con-
text. On the other hand, in the adjunct clause in (10b) only the speaker's point of
view is a valid option.

(10) a. A promis că va sosi bineînțeles (*că) la timp.
          has promised that will.3SG arrive surely that in time
          'He promised to surely arrive in time.'
      b. Deși va sosi bineînțeles (*că) la timp...
          although will.3SG arrive surely that in time
          'Although he will surely arrive in time...'

The contrast between (9) and (10) replicates the contrast signalled in (4). Cru-
cially, Krifka's (2017) proposal falls short of explaining why this would be so: Why
is embedding disallowed when E-adverbs are merged high but not when they
are merged low in the structure, since the mapping of the formal feature that
triggers this merge must be systematically associated with the same functional
head? In other words, the presence of the evidential adverbs should always sig-
nal the presence of JP, which is predicted in Krifka's system to systematically rule
out embedding, contrary to the facts in (10).

A more promising approach seems to come from Miyagawa's 2010 system,
where C is associated not only with phi-agreement features but also with dis-
course (δ) agreement features. Cross-linguistic variation follows from variation
in the transfer of the δ-feature set from C-to-T. Along these lines, the contrast
between (2a), (3a) and (2b), (3b) would show unstable systems, where both op-
tions are in place in one single language, with δ-agr at C in (2a), (3a), and δ-agr
transferred to T in (2b), (3b). This would cover the grammaticality contrast seen

with embeddings, insofar as C with a specific set of discourse Agr is unembeddable, whereas structures where δ-Agr is transferred to T are embeddable.

Miyagawa's system may seem instrumental for maintaining Cinque's (1999) hierarchy while also explaining the variation in the distribution of E-adverbs, as well as the consequences of this distribution for the syntactic behavior of the relevant structure. However, the extension of Miyagawa's analysis along these lines is problematic on other grounds: The δ-agr set at C is meant to capture the relation between topic/focus and comment/presupposition, which concerns truth value structures, not the non-at-issueness. Moreover, even if we include the E-feature sets in the δ-agr set at C, it is not clear how the cross-linguistic variation arising from C-to-T transfer may be sorted out, since the transfer may concern one set of δ-agr features (e.g., E-features) but not the other (e.g., topic/focus). This also leaves open the question of the speech act features set, which systematically blocks embedding.

I have no solution to suggest at this time for the apparently free distribution of E-adverbs as shown in (2) and (3), and their effects on clausal embedding. I only point out that this kind of data is worth investigating since it occurs quite often cross-linguistically, especially within the Romance language group. Whoever takes on this task will further Liliane's work and deepen its significance for the field of syntax-pragmatics interface.

References

Cinque, G. 1999. *Adverbs and functional heads: A cross-linguistic perspective*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Frey, W. 2018. Root clause phenomena may depend on a private act or on a public act. Paper presented at the Workshop on *Clause Typing and the Syntax-to-Discourse Relation in Head-Final Languages*, 15-17 May, 2018, University of Konstanz.

Haegeman, L. 2010. The movement derivation of conditional clauses. *Linguistic Inquiry* 41. 592–621.

Haegeman, L. 2014. West Flemish verb-based discourse markers and the articulation of the Speech Act layer. *Studia Linguistica* 68. 116–139.

Haegeman, L. & Hill, V. 2013. The syntacticization of discourse. In R. Folli, C. Sevdali & R. Truswell (eds.), *Syntax and its limits*. 370–390. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hill, V. 2007. Romanian adverbs and the pragmatic field. *The Linguistic Review* 24. 61–86.

Kidwai, A. 2010. The cartography of phases: Facts and inference in Meiteilon. In A.M. Di Sciullo & V. Hill (eds.), *Edges, heads, and projections: Interface properties*. 233–261. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Krifka, M. 2017. Assertions and judgments, epistemics and evidentials. Handout for the workshop on *Speech Acts: Meanings, Uses, Syntactic and Prosodic Realization*. ZAS, Berlin, May 2017. `http://amor.cms.huberlin.de/~h2816i3x/Talks/CommitmentEpistemicsHandout.pdf`.

McGrath, A. 2013. *C. W. Lewis: A life*. Carol Stream, ILL: Tyndale House Publishers.

Miyagawa, S. 2010. *Why agree? why move? unifying agreement-based and discourse configurational languages*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Radford, A. 2013. The complementizer system in spoken English. In V. Camacho-Taboada, A.L. Jiménez-Fernández, J. Martín-González & M. Reyes-Tejedor (eds.), *Information structure and agreement*. 11–54. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Rizzi, L. 1997. The fine structure of the left periphery. In L. Haegeman (ed.), *Elements of grammar: Handbook in generative syntax*. 281–337. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Rizzi, L. 2004. Locality and left periphery. In A. Belletti (ed.), *Structures and beyond: The cartography of syntactic structures 3*. 223–251. New York: Oxford University Press.

Some information-structure properties of Negative Preposing in English and Spanish

Ángel L. Jiménez-Fernández[*]

1 Introduction

In this squib I explore some discourse properties of a controversial operation, namely Negative Preposing. My interest on this issue is clearly and crucially marked by Liliane Haegeman's research on it.

Negative Preposing (hereafter, NPr) is open to discussion because there are two main lines of research; for some linguists it is a subtype of Contrastive or Corrective Focus, whereas for others it is an instance of Verum/Polarity Focus Fronting (VFF). While for English there seems to be some consensus on the phenomenon, in Spanish there is a hot debate as to the specific information-structure status of this type of preposing. Based on the particular kind of focus of the fronted constituent, I hope to contribute to throwing some light on the topic. In Section 2 I discuss some properties of English NPr, taken and implemented from Haegeman (2000, 2012). In Section 3 I address the focus reading of Spanish NPr and suggest that in some discourse contexts Spanish is similar to English, whereas in other contexts it is different from an information-structure perspective.

2 English Negative Preposing

Negative Preposing has been defined as a subtype of focus fronting in the English literature (Haegeman 2012, Emonds 2004, De Clercq 2010), which involves

movement of a negative or non-assertive constituent to the left periphery of the sentence, by means of which the polarity of the sentence is affected yielding a negative sentence, as in (1):

(1)   a.   [On no account] could she move to Paris.   (De Clercq 2010)
      b.   [Not a bite] did he eat.   (Green 1976: 384)

Both adjunct PPs and argument DPs can be fronted in this type of constructions. Among the defining properties of English NPr are the subject-auxiliary inversion attested in (1) and the emphasis on the negative polarity of the sentence. The first trait has been claimed to be common to all types of focus fronting, which has led linguists to argue in favour of an analysis of NPr as triggered by a focus feature. However, clear cases of focus fronting in English do not require subject-auxiliary inversion:

(2)   THIS BOOK I don't need (but that one I do).   (Haegeman 2012: 8)

Note that if no subject-auxiliary inversion takes place in NPr, the result is fully ungrammatical (though see Haegeman 2000 for a topic reading of negative elements when they exhibit no inversion):

(3)   a.   *[On no account] she could move to Paris.
      b.   *[Not a bite] he ate.

The second property that describes the phenomenon under study is the emphasis on the negative polarity of the relevant sentence caused by the fronting of the negative constituent. Sentence negation is involved in NPr. Haegeman (2000) and De Clercq (2010) argue that if a negative tag can be added to a sentence it is because this particular sentence is negative. If this is correct and sentences with NPr are negative, cases of NPr are expected to accept a *neither*-tag (since *neither*-tags are only compatible with negative clauses). This prediction is borne out in light of the data in (4):

(4)   On no account could she move to Paris, and neither could Jane. (adapted from De Clercq 2010)

Haegeman (2012) provides an analysis of NPr based on the movement of the negative constituent to a designated Focus Phrase in the left periphery. This movement is triggered by a focus feature. Since what is emphasized is the negative polarity, I assume for English that this focus feature is connected with a neg-

ative feature. In other words, the triggering featural array is [+focus, +negation], in the spirit of decomposition in features of discourse categories proposed in Jiménez-Fernández (2015).

Support for the claim that English NPr involves focus comes from the fact that it can be used as an answer to a question satisfying its information request. This is clearly stated in Culicover (1991) and Haegeman (2000), and illustrated in (5):

(5)   A: Did you see anyone?
      B: No, NOT A SINGLE PERSON did I see.   (Culicover 1991)

Note, however, that this is a polar question and the answer fulfills the information request on the polarity, so it is interpreted as negative. A couple of examples involving a *wh*-question follow, which can perfectly be replied by a NPr construction (Culicover 1991):

(6)   A: When did you ever see such a thing?
      B: NEVER have I seen such a thing.

(7)   A: When would you ever have agreed to visit Robin?
      B: AT NO TIME would I ever have agreed to visit Robin.

Importantly, what is clear is that the fronted negative constituent has some sort of focus interpretation, based on the licit marking of it as Information Focus (IF) in (6)–(7).

Alongside the IF reading, the relevant literature associates NPr with Contrastive Focus (CF) in English (Haegeman 2012). I have shown evidence that NPr can be interpreted as IF. Next question is whether evidence can be found supporting a possible interpretation of NPr as CF. Since Jespersen (1937), it is widely acknowledged that CF can be developed by means of clefting (É. Kiss 1999, Frascarelli 2000, Belletti 2005, Haegeman et al. 2014, Cruschina 2015). In some languages there is the option of developing CF either via fronting or via clefting, as illustrated for Italian, English and German (examples taken from Cruschina 2015):

(8)   [Context: I have met Charles]

      a.   GIANNI ho incontrato / È GIANNI che ho incontrato.   (Italian)
      b.   JOHN I met / It was JOHN that I met.   (English)
      c.   HANS habe ich getroffen / Es war HANS, den ich getroffen. (German)

If NPr is a subtype of CF, the prediction is that the fronted negative element should be possibly used in a cleft. Examples in (9) confirm the contrastive flavour of negative constituents, either adjuncts (9a) or arguments (9b)-(9c).

(9)   a.   It is AT NO TIME that I would ever have agreed to visit Robin.
      b.   It is NO INTEREST that they show in syntax.
      c.   It is NO ONE that I saw.

From this empirical reasoning it can be safely concluded that English NPr has two possible interpretations, namely either that of purely information focus or that of contrastive focus. Both interpretations favour an analysis in which the fronted element undergoes movement to the specifier of the designated category FocP in the left periphery.

3   Spanish Negative Preposing

Next I turn to Spanish. NPr in Spanish has not been studied in depth. Bosque (1980) notices a type of fronting which yields a negative interpretation of polarity in Spanish. The author calls these fronting operations *anteposiciones negativas* 'negative preposing', which I illustrate in (10a) for adjuncts and (10b) for arguments, from Bosque (1980: 34–35):

(10)   a.   En modo alguno se puede   tolerar   tal   actitud.
             in way   some SE can-PRES.3SG to.tolerate such attitude
             'By no means can such an attitude be tolerated.'
       b.   De ninguno de esos   problemas trató   la   reunión.
             of none   of those problems treat-PAST.3SG the meeting
             'None of those problems did the meeting discuss.'

These are cases of adjunct or argument NPr, which clearly induce a negative interpretation of the sentence polarity, given the corresponding sentences in (11) with no fronting but with the explicit occurrence of the negative adverb *no* 'not':

(11)   a.   No se puede   tolerar   tal   actitud en modo alguno.
             not SE can-PRES.3SG to.tolerate such attitude in way   some
             'Such an attitude cannot be tolerated by any means.'
       b.   La reunión no trató   de ninguno de esos   problemas.
             the meeting not treat-PAST.3SG of none   of those problems
             'The meeting didn't discuss any of those problems.'

This trait supports the idea that sentences involving NPr are marked as negative in Spanish. In the absence of fronting, some other mechanism such as insertion of the negative adverb is obligatory. The rule is known as Neg-shift (for discussion on this rule in different views, see De Clercq 2010, Haegeman 2000, Bosque 1980, Tubau 2008, Zeijlstra 2004). The test of *neither*-tags provided by Haegeman (2000) for English is easily extended to Spanish, thereby showing that negation in NPr applies to the whole sentence:

(12)   En modo alguno se puede   tolerar   tal   actitud, ni
         in way   some   SE can-PRES.3SG to.tolerate such attitude not
         tampoco tu   respuesta.
         neither   your answer
         'By no means can such an attitude be tolerated, and neither your answer can.'

The fact that a *but*-tag can be added to a NPr construction also suggests that the sentence is negative, given that *but*-tags are only compatible with a previous negative polarity sentence (Etxepare & Uribe-Etxebarria 2008); it may have a bound focus reading, suggesting that this is a subtype of CF:

(13)   A NINGÚN ESTUDIANTE me encontré   por la   facultad, sino a
         to no   student   me find-PAST.1SG by the faculty   but to
         profesores.
         professors
         'I found no students at the faculty, but I found professors.'

Concerning the formal analysis of NPr in Spanish, there are two main lines of research. On the one hand, Gallego (2007) and Battlori & Hernanz (2014) argue that this type of fronting are cases of mild focalization or weak focus fronting, suggesting that there is a focus feature triggering movement of the negative constituent and affecting the sentence polarity. Properties such as obligatory subject-auxiliary inversion are taken as evidence for their analysis.

On the other hand, Leonetti & Escandell-Vidal (2009, 2010) and Escandell-Vidal & Leonetti (2014) claim that NPr is a subtype of Polarity or Verum Focus Fronting which makes polarity negative (illustrated in (14), alongside cases of Quantifier Fronting (Quer 2002), Resumptive Preposing (Cinque 1990), etc. (see Jiménez-Fernández 2015 for a classification of types of foci in Spanish)).

(14) Nada   tengo   que añadir a lo que ya   dije   en
     nothing have-PRES.1SG that to.add to it that already say-PAST.1SG in
     su día.
     its day
     'I have nothing to add to what I said at the time.'

For Escandell-Vidal & Leonetti there is no information-structure partition in these
constructions and no contrastive focus of the fronted element is involved. Rather,
it is the sentence polarity that is emphasized. In particular, NPr highlights the
sentence negative polarity, whereas Quantifier Fronting and Resumptive Fronting
makes affirmative polarity more prominent (see also Hernanz 2006). This is why
I am taking the three phenomena as different.

    To throw some light on the possible solution for the type of focus which Span-
ish NPr instantiates, I will test whether it may have an Information Focus and/or
a Contrastive Focus interpretation. Starting with the IF reading, Escandell-Vidal
& Leonetti (2014) explicitly address the impossibility of using NPr as reply to
information-seeking questions, providing an example with QP-fronting:

(15) A: ¿ Crees   que tengo   interés?
          think-PRES.2SG that have-PRES.1SG interest
          'Do you think I have interest?'
     B: #Mucho interés tienes   tú...
          much   interest have-PRES.2SG you
          'A great interest you have...'

Extrapolating the IF interpretation to NPr, note the following natural dialogue,
suggesting that QP-fronting and NPr are distinct phenomena, sharing some prop-
erties such as the emphasis on the sentence polarity, but also showing distinct
features:

(16) A: ¿ Qué tienes   que añadir a lo que expusiste
          what have-PRES.2SG that to.add to the that present-PAST.2SG
          ayer?
          yesterday
          'What do you have to add to what you presented yesterday? '
     B: NADA   tengo   que añadir.
          nothing have-PRES.1SG that to.add
          'I have to add nothing.'

This confirms that NPr may have an IF reading in Spanish as well, similar to English.

As regards the CF interpretation, let's check whether NPr alternates with clefting. Clefting in Spanish has been held to express either IF or CF. Following Moreno Cabrera (1999) and, more recently, Feldhausen & del Mar Vanrell (2015), at least one of the interpretations of a cleft sentence is that of CF, as illustrated in (17), from Feldhausen & del Mar Vanrell (2015), adapted from Moreno Cabrera (1999: 4251):

(17)   Es   [$_{CF}$ JUAN] el que viene   (y   no Sebas).
        be-PRES-3SG   Juan the that come-PRES.3SG (and not Sebas)
        'It is Juan that will come (and not Sebas)'.

The question is whether clefting or pseufo-clefting is possible with the constituents which are fronted via NPr. It must be noted first that clefts behave like monoclausal sentences as far as negation is concerned and the negative element requires the adverb *no* 'not' to be inserted in initial position (Bosque 1980). In doing so, the results of clefting in Spanish are fully grammatical, confirming the possible use of NPr with a corrective flavour:

(18)   A: Seguro que te   encontraste con algún vecino,   ¿verdad?
          Sure   that you find-PAST.2SG with some neighbour true
          'For sure you met some neighbour, right?'
    B: No fue   A NINGÚN VECINO   a quien me encontré
          not be-PAST.3SG to no   neighbour to whom me find-PAST.1SG
          en la   entrada, sino a tu   novia.
          in the hall,   but to your girlfriend.
          'It wasn't any neighbour at all who I met in the hall, but your girlfriend.'

(19)   No fue   DE NINGUNO DE ESOS PROBLEMAS de lo   que
        not be-PAST.3SG of none   of those problems   of the that
        trató   la reunión.
        treat-PAST.3SG the meeting
        'It wasn't any of those problems that the meeting discussed.'

Just in passing, Herrero (1992: 207) states that in contexts of special expressivity such as replies or rejections negative elements can be focalized in a (pseudo-)cleft. In this connection, correction and contrast also represent especially expressive discourse situations; note that the cleft alternates with NPr in (B-B'):

(20) A: Habrás   aprobado todo, no?
          have-FUT.2SG passed   all,   no?
          'You have passed all your exams, haven't you?'
      B: NADA es   lo que he   aprobado.
          nothing be-PRES.3SG the that have-PRES.1SG passed
          'It's no exam that I have passed.'
      B': NADA he   aprobado.
          nothing have-PRES.1SG passed
          'No exam that I have passed.'

From the discussion on Spanish NPr it can be drawn the conclusion that this phe-
nomenon can be interpreted as either IF or CF, exactly as in English. This does
not mean an exhaustive list of interpretations. To the contrary, Spanish NPr may
also have a VFF reading. To accommodate the data, Spanish NPr involves move-
ment of a negative element to the left periphery.

Escandell-Vidal & Leonetti (2014) mention the possibility that this movement
is not motivated by any triggering feature, but they do not elaborate on this. I
assume that there is a feature causing the fronting operation. This feature is
similar to the one proposed for English, but differs in that the [+focus] feature is
diminished to just [+emphasis] in those cases where the NPr phenomenon is in-
terpreted as VFF. Thus Spanish NPr displays a [+emphasis, +negation], a com-
bination in charge of emphasizing the negative polarity of the whole sentence.
The precise syntactic position targeted by the negative element is a pending is-
sue in my current research on the topic (see Jiménez-Fernández 2018).

References

Battlori, M. & Hernanz, M.L. 2014. Variation in the left sentence periphery: Weak
    fronted foci in spanish and catalan. In T. Biberauer & G. Walkden (eds.), *Syntax
    over time: Lexical, morphological and information-structural interactions*. 280–
    298. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
Belletti, A. 2005. Answering with a "cleft": The role of the null subject param-
    eter and the VP periphery. In L. Brugè, G. Giusti, N. Munaro, W. Schweikert
    & G. Turano (eds.), *Proceedings of the XXX Incontro di Grammatica Generativa*.
    63–82. Venice: Cafoscarina.
Bosque, I. 1980. *Sobre la negación*. Madrid: Cátedra.
Cinque, G. 1990. *Types of Ā-dependencies*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Cruschina, S. 2015. Some notes on clefting and fronting. In E. Di Domenico, C. Hamann & S. Matteini (eds.), *Structures, strategies and beyond. studies in honour of Adriana Belletti*. 181–208. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Culicover, P. 1991. Polarity, inversion, and focus in English. In G. Westphal, B. Ao & H.R. Chae (eds.), *Proceedings of Eastern States Conference on Linguistics 1991 (ESCOL '91)*. 46–68. Columbus, OH: The Ohio State University.

De Clercq, K. 2010. NEG-shift in English: Evidence from PP-adjuncts. In D.H. An & J.T. Kim (eds.), *Proceedings of the 12th Seoul International Conference on Generative Grammar: 2010 movement in minimalism*. 231–251. Seoul: Hankuk Publishing Company.

É. Kiss, K. 1999. The english cleft construction as a focus phrase. In L. Mereu (ed.), *Boundaries of morphology and syntax*. 217–229. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Emonds, J. 2004. Unspecified categories as the key to root constructions. In D. Adger, C. de Cat & G. Tsoulas (eds.), *Peripheries: Syntactic edges and their effects*. 75–121. Dordrecht: Kluwer.

Escandell-Vidal, V. & Leonetti, M. 2014. Fronting and irony in Spanish. In A. Dufter & O. de Toledo (eds.), *Left sentence-peripheries in Spanish: Diachronic, variationist and typological perspectives*. 309–342. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Etxepare, R. & Uribe-Etxebarria, M. 2008. On negation and focus in spanish and basque. *ASJU Geh* 51. 287–309.

Feldhausen, I. & del Mar Vanrell, M. 2015. Oraciones hendidas y marcación del foco estrecho en español: Una aproximación desde la Teoría de la Optimidad Estocástica. *Revista International de Lingüísitca Iberoamericana* 13(2). 39–59.

Frascarelli, M. 2000. Frasi scisse e 'small clauses': un'analisi dell'inglese. *Lingua e Stile* 35. 417–446.

Gallego, A.J. 2007. *Phase theory and parametric variation*: Universitat Autónoma Barcelona dissertation.

Green, G.M. 1976. Main clause phenomena in subordinate clauses. *Language* 52. 387–397.

Haegeman, L. 2000. Negative preposing, negative inversion and the split CP. In L. Horn & Y. Kato (eds.), *Negation and polarity*. 21–61. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Haegeman, L. 2012. *Adverbial clauses, main clause phenomena, and composition of the left periphery, The cartography of syntactic structures 8* Oxford Studies in Comparative Syntax. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Haegeman, L., Meinunger, A. & Vercauteren, A. 2014. The architecture of *it*-clefts. *Journal of Linguistics* 50. 269–296.

Hernanz, M.L. 2006. Emphatic polarity and C in Spanish. In L. Brugè (ed.), *Studies in spanish syntax*. 105–150. Venice: Università Ca' Foscari.

Herrero, G. 1992. Las oraciones ecuacionales en español. *Verba* 19. 201–222.

Jespersen, O. 1937. *Analytic syntax*. London: Allen and Unwin.

Jiménez-Fernández, A.L. 2015. Towards a typology of focus: Subject position and microvariation at the discourse-syntax interface. *Ampersand: An International Journal of General and Applied Linguistics* 2. 49–60.

Jiménez-Fernández, A.L. 2018. Negative preposing: Intervention and parametric variation in complement clauses. *ATLANTIS* 40(1).

Leonetti, M. & Escandell-Vidal, V. 2009. Fronting and verum focus in Spanish. In A. Dufter & D. Jacob (eds.), *Focus and background in Romance languages*. 155–204. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Leonetti, M. & Escandell-Vidal, V. 2010. Las anteposiciones inductoras de foco de polaridad. In V. Castel & L. Cubo de Severino (eds.), *La renovación de la palabra en el bicentenario de la Argentina. los colores de la mirada lingüística*. 733–743. Mendoza: Editorial de la U. Nacional de Cuyo.

Moreno Cabrera, J.C. 1999. Las funciones informativas: Las perífrasis de relativo. In I. Bosque & V. Demonte (eds.), *Gramática descriptiva de la lengua Española. vol. 3*. 4245–4302. Madrid: Espasa Calpe.

Quer, J. 2002. Edging quantifiers. on QP-fronting in Western Romance. In C. Beyssade, R. Bok-Bennema, F. Drijkoningen & P. Monachesi (eds.), *Romance languages and linguistic theory*. 253–270. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Tubau, S. 2008. *Negative concord in English and Romance: Syntax-morphology interface conditions on the expression of negation*. Utrecht: LOT.

Zeijlstra, H. 2004. *Sentential negation and negative concord*. Utrecht: LOT.

Negative adjectives

Wim Klooster

1   Introduction

Liliane's work, especially her study of the syntax of negation (Haegeman 1995), has been very inspirational to me. Also, her *Introduction to Government and Binding Theory* was for many years a useful and instructive guide for my students (and me!), thanks to its clarity of style and exposition.

I chose 'negative adjectives' as subject of this squib – based on Dutch and English examples – because I believe it is one of the few not treated in her work on negation.

The term 'negative adjectives' may refer to either adjectives functioning as Negative Elements (NEs), or to antonyms of positive adjectives. (There are adjectives without antonyms, but I will leave that point aside here.) In this contribution, I will attempt to challenge the idea that if an adjective acts as an NE, it can't be a positive antonym. I will concentrate on gradable adjectives.

Examples with adjectival NEs are given below (with Negative Polarity Items (NPIs) under-lined):

(1)   Het is *gevaarlijk* er <u>ook maar</u> iets over los te laten.
      'It is *dangerous* to let on <u>anything at all</u> about it.'

(2)   Hij vond het *moeilijk* <u>ook maar</u> iets toe te geven.
      'He found it *hard* to admit <u>anything at all</u>.

An adjective's having a negative prefix (*impolite*, <u>unpleasant</u>) does not mean that it is potentially an NE, nor that it is a negative antonym (henceforth, a '[−Pol] adjective'). As illustrated in (1), it is *gevaarlijk* 'dangerous', not <u>ongevaarlijk</u> 'safe', lit. 'undangerous', that licenses NPIs. And, as will be argued below, *dangerous* and *hard* are positive (henceforth, '[+Pol]') adjectives.

Several tests have been suggested in the literature for determining which of a pair of antonymous adjectives is [+Pol]:

First, if a member of a pair of antonyms, e.g. *lang/kort* 'long, tall'/'short', takes measure phrases, it is positive: *1 meter lang* vs. **1 meter kort*.

Second, comparative constructions with inchoative copulas, like X gets/ becomes [Adj$_{[\pm Pol]}$]-*er*, have paraphrases with (synonyms of) *stijgen* 'rise' and *dalen* 'fall', corresponding to [+Pol] and [−Pol], respectively. The adjectives in question (say, *warm/cold*, or *expensive/cheap*) should be linkable to objective parameter nouns, i.e. nouns referring to measurable properties (e.g. *temperature* or *price*):

(3)　X wordt warmer/kouder – De temperatuur van X stijgt (neemt toe)/daalt (neemt af)
　　　X gets warmer/colder – X's temperature rises (increases)/falls (decreases)

(4)　X wordt duurder/goedkoper – De prijs van X stijgt/daalt
　　　X is getting more expensive/cheaper – The price of X is rising/falling

This test does not work for adjectives not related to objective parameter nouns. For instance, the pair *schadelijk/onschadelijk* (*harmful/harmless*) lacks a corresponding objective parameter noun suitable for an unambiguous test. The 'degree of harmfulness' just as well as the 'degree of harmlessness' can be said to increase or decrease.

Third, whereas speakers have little difficulty in interpreting expressions like 'zero fertility' or 'zero speed', they find it hard to make sense of 'zero infertility', or 'zero slowness'. While many positive gradable adjectives can be associated with some 'zero point' (absence of any degree of e.g. fertility or speed), it appears difficult to determine such a point for their negative antonyms. (But see the proviso in the last section, in connection with the 'black-and-white' effect.) In Sassoon's (2010) terms, while negative adjectives map entities to values that are 'linearly reversed' and 'linearly transformed' in comparison with their values in their positive antonyms, we do not know which linearly reversed function they denote. Their 'zero point' is undetermined.

That an adjective licensing NPIs is not necessarily [−Pol] can be demonstrated with, for instance, *moeilijk* (*hard*, *difficult*). As we saw above, it may occur as a (weak) NE. Still, it must be considered the positive antonym of *makkelijk* (*easy*): *zero easiness* is puzzling at best, whereas *zero difficulty* is readily interpretable. Not surprisingly, of the two parameter nouns *moeilijkheidsgraad* (*degree/level/ rate of difficulty*) and (*ge)makkelijkheidsgraad* (ditto *of easiness*), the former is more natural and common. In addition, *a low degree of difficulty* is applicable in

cases where a thing can be qualified as easy – which is an indication of the 'neutral' character of *degree of difficulty*, even though there is no standard measure of difficulty. *A low degree of easiness*, on the other hand, apart from sounding odd, does not appear to cover things that may be called difficult.

In order to get a clearer view of what is involved in determining the polarity of gradables, it may be useful to consider their classification into subsets. This will be done in the next section.

2 A taxonomy of gradables

The following is a summary, with some slight adaptations, of a classification into subsets of gradables proposed in Klooster (1976).

Gradables can be either [+Pol] or [−Pol]. They are, furthermore, either 'objective', in the sense that they can be linked to objective (i.e measurable) parameters like length or luminosity, – or 'subjective'. A subset of the objective gradables consists of adjectives bearing the feature [+Oriented], while all others (whether subjective or objective) are [−Oriented]. (For the sake of convenience, I adopt Bierwisch's terminology here.) [+Oriented, +Pol] adjectives allow equative constructions with *half as*, *twice as* etc., whereas their antonyms do not; [−Oriented] adjectives on the other hand, whether [+Pol] or [−Pol], always allow such constructions (Bierwisch 1967):

[+Oriented]:

(5)   a.   The table is twice/half as *long* as the bench.
      b.   *The table is twice/half as *short* as the bench.

(6)   a.   He is twice/half as *old* as his brother.
      b.   *He is twice/half as *young* as his brother.

[−Oriented]:

(7)   a.   John is twice/half as *good* at tennis as Bill.
      b.   John is twice/half as *bad* at tennis as Bill .

(8)   a.   The room is twice/half as *light* as the corridor.
      b.   The room is twice/half as *dark* as the corridor.

The [+Pol, +Oriented] adjectives can all be used in a neutral sense, that is, without presupposing some subjective norm. A subset of these take measure phrases

148

(without requiring the comparative form, as in, for instance, *2 grams heavier*, or preceding *too*, as in *2 grams too heavy*.)

To determine whether a given adjective is subjective, one can check if it fits in the context *I find X ___-er (more ___) than Y*. here are subjective adjectives for which this test is not suitable, such as *dizzy* or *sick*. However, these can be tested in contexts like *I feel ___-er (more ___) now than I did before*. I will refer to these tests as 'subjective comparative tests'.

Objective gradables can be used in a subjective sense, presupposing some subjective norm. Examples are *John is old*, *You are still young*, *It's warm/cold in here*. They do not, however, pass the first subjective comparative test mentioned above,[1] and are always associated with some objective scale of measurement. *Old*, though allowing use in the subjective sense, may occur in the 'neutral', objective sense as a measure adjective or, for instance, in questions like *How old are these kittens? Young*, presupposing a norm in the example above, may also occur in the 'objective' sense: *a few months too young*. Similarly, subjective *warm* ($warm_s$) has an objective counterpart ($warm_o$). Like *old*, $warm_o$ can be related to an objective scale of measurement. Its antonym *cold*, too, may occur in either sense: *it's cold outside* vs. *20 degrees too cold for April*.

The above is summarised in (9):

(9)

	SUBJECTIVE	OBJECTIVE		
+POL	good, beautiful, $warm_s$, *etc.*	light, $warm_o$, *etc.*	expensive, heavy, *etc.*	***tall***, ***large***, *etc.*
−POL	bad, ugly, $cold_s$, *etc.*	dark, $cold_o$, *etc.*	cheap, light, *etc.*; short, small, *etc.*	
	−ORIENTED	+ORIENTED		

(Measure adjectives are in bold italics)

3   Subjectivity, negative antonyms

The meaning aspect shared by all objective gradables can be described by means of a scale of indeterminate length, starting at a point 0, with points on the scale

---

[1] They do pass the second one, but only when taken in a special sense, as in *I feel (c)older now than I did before*.
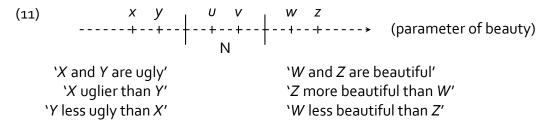
149

representing certain values. In (10), the value p represents the height of, say, some poplar tree, and e the height of some elm tree, where the poplar is taller than the elm.

(10)   ⊢- - - - -+- - - - -+- - - - - - - - - - - - - - →   (parameter of height)
          0   e p

The scale being directional, we say that p is at *positive distance* from e, or D(p,e). For expressing the reverse, *negative distance*, we need the complement of D, D′: for all parameter values x,y ($x \neq y$), D′(x,y) is equivalent to D(y,x) as well as to NOT (D(x,y)). Thus, since e is at a negative distance from p (the elm is less tall than the poplar), we can also represent the relation between e and p by writing D′(e,p).[2]

One difference between objective and subjective gradables seems to be that the scales associated with the latter do not have a definite starting point or 'zero' point. The fact that the 'zero point' criterion mentioned in section 1 gives the clearest results with objective adjectives (e.g., [??]*zero slowness* vs. [(?)]*zero carelessness*) may well be related to this. According to Sassoon (2010: 176), "positive [objective, WK] adjectives tend not to have a maximal point (e.g., there is no tallest point), a fact which renders the zero point of their negative antonym undefined."

For subjective gradables, as well as for [−Pol] objective ones like *short* or *dark*, we must introduce a norm N on the scale, the scale having, in the case of objective adjectives, a zero point, as in (10). N is not necessarily a point; it may be a 'grey area' corresponding to notions like 'average' or 'neither' (e.g., 'neither beautiful nor ugly, but something in-between'). Thus, we can represent the relevant semantic properties of, say, *beautiful/ugly* as in (11), where x, y, u, v, w and z are 'beauty values' attributed to X, Y, U, V, W and Z, respectively.

---

[2] The well-known fact that *than*-clauses contain an abstract negative operator can be accounted for in this approach by having the logical representation of comparative constructions express that there are values v between the compared values, say, e and p, such that D(v,e) & NOT D(v,p) (Klooster 2016). In terms of 'extent' this can be reformulated by stating that, for some extents $\mathbf{e}^{p,e}$, the poplar is tall to $\mathbf{e}^{p}$ while it is not the case that the extent $\mathbf{e}^{e}$ to which the elm is tall equals or includes $\mathbf{e}^{p}$.

(11)

```
              x   y       u   v       w   z
-----+--+--┼--+--+--┼--+--+----->    (parameter of beauty)
           N
```

'*X* and *Y* are ugly'   '*W* and *Z* are beautiful'
'*X* uglier than *Y*'   '*Z* more beautiful than *W*'
'*Y* less ugly than *X*'   '*W* less beautiful than *Z*'

In (11), both *x* and *y* are at negative distance from N ('*X* and *Y* are ugly'). Further-more, *x* is at negative distance from *y* ('*X* is uglier than *Y*'), and *y* is at positive distance from *x* ('*Y* is less ugly than *X*'). The relationships between *w*, *z* and N can be stated analogously, with 'negative' switched to 'positive' and vice versa.

If two values in a comparison are within N, like *u* and *v* in (13), then, in my judgment, something like '(both are average but) *U* is less beautiful than *V*' would seem more appropriate than '(both are average but) *V* is less ugly than *U*'. If this intuition is correct, it is consistent with the idea that we are dealing with a 'scale of beauty' rather than of ugliness, and hence, with the intuition that *beautiful* is [+Pol].

What if the compared values are each in a different 'subparameter', *ugly* and *beautiful*? In a context where, say, Snow White is beautiful and the queen (in disguise) ugly, *The queen is less beautiful than Snow White* would perhaps be acceptable as an understatement. Substituting *less beautiful* by *uglier* here, however, would produce a statement not applicable in such a context. I am not quite certain about *Snow White is less ugly than the queen* and *Snow White is more beautiful than the queen*. The former seems more comical than the latter.

Can there be a 'zero' beauty value? On the Web, occurrences – in the senses intended – are scarce of *zero beauty* (three times), as well as of *zero ugliness* (just once). It seems safe to assume that subjective adjectives do not have minimum or maximum values. It could very well be, though, that whenever *zero beauty*, *zero difficulty* etc. do occur, such expressions refer to the left hand boundary of N, or to N itself, should N be a single point on the scale. The latter occurs in certain contexts where N reduces to a sharp boundary between the two subparameters, giving rise to the 'black-and-white' effect, so that *not beautiful* comes to mean 'ugly' and not *ugly*, 'beautiful', etc. In such cases, expressions like zero ugliness do make sense, contrary to what the third criterion mentioned in section 1 would lead one to expect.

In any case, clearly the notion 'norm' must be present in some form or other in lexical entries of subjective gradables and [−Pol] objective ones. The entries of all [−Pol] adjectives, furthermore, should somehow express that they map

some value *x* on the scale involved, such that, for some norm N, *x* is at a negative distance from N, that is, NOT D(*x*,N).

The fact that pairs like *warm/cold*, *light/dark*, or *sharp/vague* (said of images) refer to sensory perceptions, which are in themselves subjective, may be related to their sharing the feature [−Oriented] with subjective adjectives. At the same time, like other objective adjectives, they are associated with objective parameters (temperature, luminosity, resolution).

4 Conclusion. Negative antonyms vs. adjectival NEs

Kennedy (1998) argues that there is a connection between a gradable adjective's being [−Pol] and its being monotone decreasing, that is, an NE. But as I argued above, this connection does not seem to exist. *Dangerous* in (1) is [+Pol]: 'zero danger' seems less odd than 'zero safety'. (Occurrences of zero safety can be found on the Web, but never with the meaning 'absence of safety'.) *Difficult* in (2), as pointed out earlier, is also [+Pol]. The fact that nevertheless these adjectives license NPIs must mean that it is not the negative distance from some norm N which somehow causes them to function as NEs. Rather, the evaluation of properties like 'dangerous' or 'difficult' relative to what is desirable underlies their being felt as negative.

Of the antonyms *zwaar* 'heavy, hard' and *licht* 'light, easy', the former is [+Pol]. Yet it can function as an NE, while *licht* cannot (cf. (12)). Similarly, *ver* 'far' is [+Pol] – for instance, it takes measure phrases – and *dichtbij* 'close' is [−Pol]. But *far* licenses NPIs, whereas *close* does not (cf. (13)).

(12)   a.   Het viel hem *zwaar* om   dat te <u>verkroppen</u>.
             It   fell him heavy COMP that to swallow
             'It was *hard* for him to swallow that.'
       b.   *Het viel hem *licht* om dat te <u>verkroppen</u>.

(13)   a.   De   hut was *ver* van   (<u>ook</u> <u>maar</u>) <u>enige</u> bewoonde plek.
             The hut was far from even just   any   inhabited spot
             'The hut was far from any inhabited place.'
       b.   *De hut was *dichtbij* van (<u>ook</u> <u>maar</u>) <u>enige</u> bewoonde plek.

The 'negativity' of *zwaar* 'hard' and *ver* 'far' in (12) and (13) may have an explanation similar to the one suggested above regarding dangerous and difficult.

Concluding, I submit that the above observations in connection with criteria

for determining whether an adjective is 'negative' (in the sense of $[-\text{Pol}]$) and those regarding adjectival NEs, at least cast doubt on the idea that there are adjectives licensing NPIs by virtue of their being negative antonyms.

References

Bierwisch, M. 1967. Some semantic universals of German adjectives. *Foundations of Language* 3. 1–36.

Haegeman, L. 1995. *The syntax of negation*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Kennedy, C. 1998. On the monotonicity of polar adjectives. `http://semantics.uchicago.edu/kennedy/docs/monotonicity.pdf`.

Klooster, W. 1976. Adjectieven, neutraliteit en comparatieven. In G. Koefoed & A. Evers (eds.), *Lijnen van taaltheoretisch onderzoek*. 229–259. Groningen: Tjeenk Willink.

Klooster, W. 2016. NEG CPs and monotonicity. In A. Bannink & W. Honselaar (eds.), *From variation to iconicity. festschrift for Olga Fischer on the occasion of her 65th birthday*. 221–248. Amsterdam: Pegasus.

Sassoon, G.W. 2010. Degree functions of negative adjectives. *Natural Language Semantics* 18. 41–81.

Fanbrief
Fan mail

Karen Lahousse[*]

Beste Liliane,

Ik richt maar even het woord tot jou in onze moedertaal, hoewel… dat klopt natuurlijk niet helemaal: allebei zijn we opgegroeid met de ronkende klanken van ons heerlijke West-Vlaamse dialect, op de cadans van het alom tegenwoordige motto – de provinciale hymne zou je bijna kunnen zeggen – *doe mo geweune voart* 'doe maar gewoon voort'.

En 'gewoon voortdoen', dat heb je gedaan. . . en hoe! Je bent een van de allerbeste internationale taalkundigen, met een duizelingwekkende wetenschappelijke output op zoveel domeinen van de syntaxis en over zoveel talen. Het is dan ook niet makkelijk om alles wat je gedaan hebt en alles waar we je dankbaar voor zijn in één tekst te vatten. Toch zal ik hier een poging wagen, omdat ik je graag mee wil geven hoezeer ik jou en je taalkundige werk apprecieer, en hoezeer je mij en vele anderen inspireert.

Wat mij steeds opnieuw treft wanneer ik een artikel of boek van je lees, is hoe fundamenteel eerlijk je onderzoek is. Die eerlijkheid manifesteert zich eerst en vooral in de stevige empirische basis van je analyses: generalisaties en claims baseer je op reeksen van descriptieve argumenten, mooie minimale paren en sprekende voorbeelden van authentiek taalgebruik uit verschillende registers. In jouw artikels worden lastige of onverklaarbare gegevens niet in voetnoten weggestopt; in jouw artikels zijn er geen theorie-interne argumenten zonder onafhankelijke descriptieve staving. Deze empirische onderbouwing maakt je werk tijdloos, zorgt ervoor dat het relevant is – en zal blijven – voor huidige en toekomstige taalkundigen van verschillende strekkingen.

---

[*][English translation below]

Je absolute en principiële eerlijkheid is daarnaast ook duidelijk voelbaar in de manier waarop je krediet geeft aan andere onderzoekers. De bibliografieën van je artikels en boeken zijn nagenoeg exhaustief, je verwijst steevast naar een groot aantal eerdere werken over het onderwerp, of dat nu recente of oudere publicaties zijn, in grote of minder grote tijdschriften, van mensen uit je inner circle of van onderzoekers met een volledig andere achtergrond, van analyses waar je het mee eens of niet mee eens bent. Je neemt iedereen serieus en behandelt iedereen gelijk, of het nu gaat om een absolute beginner of een bekende naam in het wereldje.

Vanuit een meer theoretisch perspectief hou ik ook erg van de manier waarop je, met een hele rij aan glasheldere descriptieve en theoretische argumenten, nagenoeg vastgeroeste hypotheses in de taalkundige literatuur aan het wankelen weet te brengen, of het nu gaat om de positie van links-perifere topics in het Engels en de Romaanse talen, of de syntactische positie van de focus van een gekloofde zin, om er maar een paar te noemen. Als jij je licht hebt laten schijnen op een of ander fenomeen, wordt er nadien niet meer geschreven 'there is no consensus on. . .': de argumenten die je aanbrengt zijn meestal zó overtuigend en doordacht dat er nadien gewoonweg geen discussie over het onderwerp meer ís.

Je onderzoek heeft veel andere taalkundigen geïnspireerd: je werk zet steeds aan tot nadenken, het geeft de lezer zin om iets verder uit te spitten, te toetsen aan een andere taal of dialect. Het is een grote verdienste van je onderzoek, dat het tegelijk iets afrondt én opnieuw een opening creëert en toekomstig onderzoek initieert. Zo ben ik een hevige fan van je werk over gekloofde zinnen, waar je onomstotelijk aantoont dat het gekloofde element zich niet in de linker periferie van de zin bevindt. Dat is alvast één debat minder in de taalkundige literatuur. Ook je vele onderzoek naar bijwoordelijke bijzinnen en hoofdzinsverschijnselen, waarin je de functioneel-taalkundige literatuur de erkenning geeft die ze verdient in dit domein, en waarin je het verband legt met lokaliteitsrestricties, heeft mijn werk over het Frans erg beïnvloed. Verder hou ik van de manier waarop je concepten uit Informatiestructuur gebruikt in je syntactisch werk: met een grote omzichtigheid, en zonder ze volledig te herleiden tot een puur syntactisch kenmerk. Met je ideeën over voorwaardelijke bijzinnen heb ik tot nog toe niets gedaan, maar dat zit er zeker aan te komen. Je blijft inspireren.

Zelf blijf je ook inspiratie vinden: je hebt een immense gedrevenheid, een bijna buitenaardse of in ieder geval toch bovenmenselijke output (vergeef mij deze adjectieven waarbij je – nuchter als je bent – wellicht je wenkbrauwen fronst). In Leuven ging en gaat nog steeds het verhaal – ik vertelde het je al eens eerder –

dat er ooit een scatterplot werd gemaakt van de wetenschappelijke output van Vlaamse taalkundigen, en dat jij daarin een heel extreme waarde innam. In die zin hebben de adjectieven buitenaards en bovenmenselijk, die ik hierboven gebruikte, toch wel enige iconische waarde...

Het eerste dat ik van jou las, was je *Introduction to Government and Binding Theory*, het boek met de grijze kaft dat ik na een tijdje bijna uit het hoofd kende, een handboek van een ongekende helderheid, enorm aantrekkelijk voor de beginnende en hongerige taalkundige die ik was. Met dat boek heb je een hele generatie jonge mensen overtuigd van het belang van de generatieve taalkunde, heb je glashelder uitgelegd wat de empirische basisvragen zijn van het model, de explicative power ervan, de basismethodologie, de uitgangspunten. In naam van al deze mensen: bedankt daarvoor!

Fantastisch is het hoe je de generatieve taalkunde weer helemaal binnenbracht in België. Ik weet nog goed hoe we, zo'n tien jaar geleden, hoorden van je benoeming als Odysseus-professor in Gent. Het was alsof er plots weer een toekomst was voor generatieve taalkunde in Vlaanderen: wij onderzoekers die ons tot dan toe een beetje 'verscholen', of onderdak zochten in het buitenland, mochten plots weer gewoon generatieve-taalkundige-in-Vlaanderen zijn . . . zo voelde het toch aan. Met jouw aanstelling was er in Vlaanderen plots weer openlijk erkenning van de generatieve taalkunde; plots was er weer bedrijvigheid, waren er conferenties, contacten en mogelijkheden, en werden er weer heel wat jonge mensen aangetrokken om hier taalkundig onderzoek te doen over fascinerende syntactische onderwerpen. Bedankt ook daarvoor!

Je hebt ook het West-Vlaams op de taalkundige kaart gezet: je artikels over complementizer agreement, negative doubling, possessor relations en pronomina in het West-Vlaams zijn pareltjes die – voor wie er nog aan zou twijfelen – aantonen hoe schijnbaar kleine observaties op een micro-niveau implicaties kunnen hebben voor taalvergelijking op een macro-niveau en taalkundige theorie in het algemeen. Dankzij jou is 'West-Flemish' een begrip geworden in de generatieve taalkunde: hoe vaak heb ik niet op een of ander diner van een conferentie, waar iemand me vroeg naar mijn moedertaal, zonder veel verdere uitleg kunnen antwoorden: "Liliane's dialect".

Bedankt, Liliane, dat je met zoveel zorg zetelt in wetenschappelijke commissies. Voor veel mensen, ook niet-generativisten, is het een geruststelling dat iemand met zo'n principes, iemand die zo objectief en eerlijk is, waakt over de ingediende dossiers.

Bedankt, voor de kansen die je me hebt gegeven, bijvoorbeeld om te spreken op de *Subjects Workshop* in 2012. Bedankt ook voor de kleine babbeltjes die we

zo nu en dan hadden, meestal in de marge van een lezing, doctoraatsverdediging of congres, soms via de telefoon, en waarbij het me meer dan eens opviel hoe je terecht verontwaardigd blijft over bepaalde situaties, zonder na een tijdje over te gaan tot gelaten schouderophalen.

Het is erg moeilijk om voor te stellen dat jij op emeritaat gaat, en stiekem denk (en hoop) ik dan ook dat je gewoon even productief zult blijven als voordien, omdat je je nu helemaal kunt wijden aan de kern, het taalkundig wetenschappelijk onderzoek, zonder alle administratieve rompslomp die een academische carrière ook met zich meebrengt. Als dat is wat je wil, dan wens ik het je van harte toe!

Maar toch hoop ik dat je daarnaast ook substantieel meer tijd zult krijgen én nemen voor al het niet-taalkundige dat je graag doet, voor alles wat je rust en warmte brengt, voor de kleine dingetjes die het leven zo mooi maken, van frozen yoghurt en poezengesnor tot intense momenten met wie je liefhebt. Bedankt voor alles! *Toet in' droai*!

Karen Lahousse (KU Leuven, België)

Dear Liliane[1],

I'll address you in our mother tongue, although… that's not exactly true, is it? Both of us grew up with the throbbing sounds of our delightful West-Flemish dialect, on the cadence of the omnipresent motto – the provincial hymn, one could say – *doe mo geweune voart* 'just keep going'.

And 'just keep going', you've certainly done that… and how! You are one of the very best international linguists, with a dazzling scientific output in so many areas of syntax and about so many languages. This makes it quite hard to summarize in a small text like this one everything you've done and all that we're so grateful for. I will nonetheless give it a try, because I would really like to show you how much I appreciate you and your linguistic work, and how much you inspire me and others.

What strikes me time and again when I read one of your articles or books is how fundamentally honest your research is. That honesty manifests itself first and foremost in the thorough empirical basis of your analyses: you base your generalizations and claims on descriptive arguments, elegant minimal pairs and vivid examples of authentic language use from different registers. In your articles, tricky or inexplicable data are not hidden in footnotes; your articles don't contain theory-internal arguments without independent descriptive support. This empirical foundation makes your work timeless and assures that it is – and will remain – relevant for contemporary and future linguists with different backgrounds.

Your absolute and principled honesty is also illustrated by the way in which you give credit to other researchers. Your articles' and books' bibliographies are practically exhaustive, you consistently refer to a large number of previous works on the topic, whether they be recent or older publications, in bigger or smaller journals, written by people from your inner circle or by researchers with a completely different background, whether you agree with the analysis or not. You take everyone seriously and you treat people equally, regardless of whether they are absolute beginners or well-established names in the field.

From a more theoretical perspective, I also really like the way in which you manage to undermine long-standing, rusty hypotheses in the linguistic literature by means of a whole number of crystal-clear descriptive and theoretical arguments. These hypotheses cover a range of subjects, such as the position of

---

[1][Dutch (original) version above]

158

left-peripheral topics in English and Romance languages and the syntactic position of the focal element of cleft sentences, to mention but a few. Once you have shed your light on some phenomenon, people no longer write "There is no consensus on...": the arguments you present are usually so convincing and thought-through that a discussion about that phenomenon is simply no longer possible.

Your research has inspired many other linguists: your work always provides food for thought, it makes the reader want to delve into the matter, to check it in a different language or dialect. One of the great merits of your work is that it rounds off things, but at the same time it creates new starting points for future research. For instance, I am a huge fan of your work on clefts, in which you indisputably show that the clefted element is not located in the left periphery. One issue linguists don't have to worry about anymore. Other analyses you have conducted and which have largely influenced my own work on French are your many papers on adverbial clauses and main clause phenomena, in which you give the functional linguistic literature the credits it deserves in this area, and in which you demonstrate connections with locality and relativized minimality. I also very much appreciate the way you use notions related to information structure in your syntactic work: with great caution and without reducing them entirely to syntactic features. I haven't put your ideas about conditional clauses into practice yet, but that's bound to happen soon. You keep inspiring me.

You also keep finding your own inspiration: you are immensely driven and your output is almost extraterrestrial or at least superhuman (forgive me for these adjectives that may make you frown, given your sober nature). In Leuven there's this rumor (I've told you about it before) that they once generated a scatterplot of the scientific output of Flemish linguists and that you were an absolute outlier. In this sense, the adjectives extraterrestrial and superhuman, which I used above, do have some iconic value . . .

I was first introduced to your work when I read *Introduction to Government and Binding Theory*, the book with the grey cover that I almost knew by heart, a manual of unprecedented clarity, extremely attractive to a beginning and hungry linguist such as myself at the time. With this book, you have convinced a whole generation of young linguists of the importance of generative linguistics, you've explained in a crystal-clear manner what the main empirical questions of the model are, what its explicative power is, what its basic methodology and premises are. On behalf of all these people: thank you!

It's also fantastic how you were able to bring generative linguistics back to Belgium. I remember very clearly how we heard about your nomination as Odys-

159

seus professor in Gent about 10 years ago. It was as though generative linguistics in Flanders suddenly had a future again: we, researchers who had thus far been more or less "in hiding" or had sought refuge abroad, could all of a sudden be generative linguists in Flanders out in the open... or at least that's how it felt. With your appointment, Flanders suddenly acknowledged generative linguistics again; there was activity again, there were conferences, contacts and possibilities, and quite a number of young people were compelled to do research about fascinating syntactic subjects again. Thanks for that as well!

You've put West-Flemish on the linguistic map: your papers on complementizer agreement, negative doubling, possessor relations and pronouns in West-Flemish are pearls that – should anyone still have doubts about this – show how apparently small observations on a micro-level can have implications for linguistic comparison on a macro-level and for linguistic theory in general. Thanks to you, "West-Flemish" has made a name for itself in generative linguistics: it has happened so often at conference dinners that I was asked about my mother tongue, and without further explanation, I could answer: "Liliane's dialect".

Thank you, Liliane, for participating in scientific committees with your care. It's a great comfort for many people, generativists and non-generativists alike, that such a principled person, someone who is that objective and honest, watches over the submitted applications.

Thank you for the chances you have given me, for instance the opportunity to speak at the *Subjects Workshop* in 2012. Thanks also for the short chats we've had every now and then, usually at some lecture, doctoral defense or conference, sometimes on the phone. It struck me more than once how genuinely offended you still are about certain situations, without shrugging your shoulders about it after some time.

It's very hard to image you retiring, and I still secretly think (and hope) that you will simply remain as productive as before, because you will be able to dedicate all our time to the core, scientific linguistic research, without the administrative burden that also comes with an academic career. If that's what you want, I hope with all my heart you will achieve it!

But I also hope that you will have (and take!) a lot more time for all the non-linguistic things you like to do, everything that brings you peace and quiet and warmth, all the small things that make life so beautiful, from frozen yoghurt to cats snoring to intense moments with your loved ones.

Thank you for everything! *Toet in' droai!* 'See you later'!

Morphology Driven by Syntax: XP Movement and Allomorphy

Tom Leu[*]

1 Introduction

In the introduction to syntax class I took with Liliane Haegeman in 1994 in Geneva, I sure learned that syntax was driven by morphology. This was primarily referring to head movement (Pollock 1989), as I recall. Later that decade coming back from the GLOW meeting in Berlin, I had the pleasure of bringing Liliane a handout by Matt Pearson on X(P)-movement which she seemed interested in. Now, two decades later, the relation between syntax and morphology is still on many a syntactician's daily mind, and (even) the head vs XP-movement issue doesn't seem to have been decisively settled on all battle grounds. Therefore I will address, in this short paper, how some aspect of morphology is driven by syntax, and more concretely, how an XP movement analysis of verb movement makes more interesting predictions for allomorphy than a head movement analysis, exemplified for one particular kind of case. I do so by adding to Merchant's (2015) discussion of Greek verb stem allomorphy an analytical option which was not considered by Merchant. I will show how my proposal is able to capture the fact that although four feature (value)s are among the conditioning factors, the resultant allomorphy patterns are systematically limited to a maximally three-way variation.
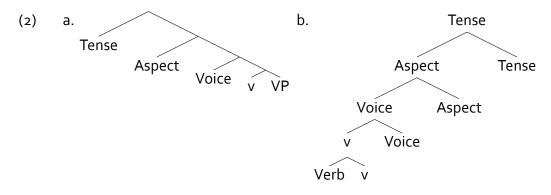
2 Merchant (2015): Spanning allomorphy

Merchant discusses locality constraints on the conditioning context for suppletive allomorphy as exemplified by the voice-aspect system of Greek verbal morphology. The backdrop to his discussion is work by Bobaljik (2000, 2012) and Embick (2010) from which Merchant distills the following proposals:[1]

(1) a. Lexical insertion proceeds bottom-up / root-outward.
     b. Contextual allomorphy requires linear adjacency.

Merchant calls (1b) the *Node Adjacency Hypothesis*. The assumed syntactic ((2)a) and corresponding synthetic ((2)b) structures for the clause and verb, respectively, express the semantic composition of Aspect with a previously formed VoiceP.

(2) a.
```
        Tense
       /
   Tense
        \
        Aspect
              \
              Voice
                   \
                   v  VP
```

b.
```
              Tense
             /     \
         Aspect    Tense
        /      \
     Voice    Aspect
    /     \
   v      Voice
  /  \
Verb   v
```

2.1 Merchant's explicit problem

Modern Greek verb morphology, as discussed by Merchant, exhibits stem allomorphy sensitive to the combination of Voice and Aspect specifications, which, in some relevant cases, are individually realized/lexicalized, as illustrated in (4d) below. Of particular (though not exclusive) gravity are three verbs which exhibit a three-way stem suppletion pattern that is sensitive to a combination of (the features of) Voice and Aspect.[2] (3) gives the three stems (with the non.active suffix -θ-) for the three suppletive verbs with a description of the relevant conditioning environments (Merchant 2015: p.277, 11).

---

[1]For fuller discussion, obviously, see the sources cited, among others.

[2]A larger set of verbs raises the same locality issue for non-suppletive allomorphy, all of which also show at most a three-way allomorphy pattern, cf. (Merchant 2015: 281).

(3)   'eat'   'see'   'say'

    a.   tro(χ)-   vlep-   le(χ)-   IMPERFECTIVE

    b.   fa(χ)-   ð-   p-   ACTIVE.PERFECTIVE

    c.   faχó-θ-   iðo-θ-   lex-θ-/ipo-θ-   NON.ACTIVE.PERFECTIVE

The categories that determine the context for allomorph selection are sometimes not overtly realized. This fact has some systematicity to it, to which I will return.

(4)   a.   *tróo*

        tró -Ø   -Ø   -o

        eat -ACT -IMPERF -NON.PAST.1.SG

  b.   *tróχome*

        tróχ -Ø   -Ø   -ome

        eat   -NON.ACT -IMPERF -NON.PAST.1.SG

  c.   *fáo*

        fá -Ø   -Ø   -o

        eat -ACT -PERF -NON.PAST.1.SG

  d.   *faχóϑika*

        faχó -θ   -ik   -a

        eat   -NON.ACT -PERF -PAST.1.SG

I will, for the sake of argument, assume Merchant's morphological segmentation to be correct. Since Greek (4d) has overt exponents in both (non-active) Voice and (perfective) Aspect, pruning (i.e. structural annihilation of heads) is not an option. And since Voice and Aspect are individually targeted by VI (Vocabulary Insertion) in (4d), they clearly are not fused.

In [+active] Voice, vocabulary insertion needs to know perfective from imperfective contexts, (4a) vs (4c). And in [-active] Voice, vocabulary insertion, too, needs to know perfective from imperfective contexts, (4b) vs (4d). Hence, assuming ((2)b), there is a locality problem: Allomorph selection for the stem is sensitive to features of a non-adjacent head. In Merchant's words: *"The form of the stem is determined by the aspect of the verb, but by hypothesis, this aspectual node is not adjacent to the stem in the non-active"* (p.281).

The vocabulary items (lexical insertion rules) in (5) capture the right distribution. As Merchant points out (p.280), making stem-allomorph selection sensitive to the presence of /θ/ (which would correctly register non-active perfective) would violate inside-out lexicalization, and is, therefore, on standard assump-

tions not available.

(5) a. $\sqrt{EAT} \rightarrow$ fa(ɣ) / _____ Voice[+act] Aspect[+perf]
     b. $\sqrt{EAT} \rightarrow$ faɣo / _____ Voice[-act] Aspect[+perf]
     c. $\sqrt{EAT} \quad \rightarrow \quad$ tro(ɣ) *(elsewhere form, found in [±active].[imperfective])*

Of particular relevance to the proposal I will develop in section 3 is that in the imperfective, (5c) is used irrespective of the Voice specification. Hence it is the perfective Aspect that correlates with the more specific allomorphy, where allomorph allomorph selection differentiates Voice specification.

2.2 Merchant's proposal

Keeping to the structure in ((2)b), Merchant loosens the locality requirements on allomorphy to a sufficient degree by calling upon the notion of *span* (Abels & Muriungi 2008, Taraldsen 2010, Svenonius 2012) which has been formulated in some of the nanosyntactic literature. Merchant (p.288) mentions Svenonius' (2012) formulation of a span as *"a complement sequence of heads ... in a single extended projection."* This shall be sufficiently precise for our purposes. His proposal now consists of two claims, which can be informally rendered as follows.

(6) a. Only a span can be targeted by vocabulary insertion.
     b. Allomorphy can be conditioned only by an adjacent span.

(6a) is standard in the spanning literature.[3] (6b) is Merchant's replacement of (1b), which he calls the *Span Adjacency Hypothesis*. Note that whether the heads of a span are lexicalized individually or in a portmanteau fashion is immaterial to their involvement in allomorph-selection in a subjacent node.[4] This is, of course, expected (for inside-out sensitivity) given inside-out lexicalization.

2.3 Merchant's (implicit) prediction

Of interest to my contribution here is the prediction, implied in Merchant's proposal, regarding the variety of allomorphy patterns allowed and hence expected.

---

[3]This allows an X-bar friendly variant of aspects of Brody's (2000) mirror theory proposal.

[4]*"Allomorphy is [...] conditioned locally [...] by features in adjacent spans, whether or not those spans are themselves lexicalized by Vocabulary items."* (Merchant 2015: 294)

In the empirical domain of Modern Greek verbs considered by Merchant, we observe three allomorphy patterns: (a) lack of allomorphic variation (e.g. *enϑarin-* 'encourage', p.283, 20, 15); (b) two-way allomorphy (e.g. *din- / di-* 'dress', p.283, 20, 12); and (c) three-way allomorphy (e.g. *empne- / empnef- / empnefs-* 'inspire', p.283, 20, 3). The latter pattern constituted the crucial cases for his proposal.

Interestingly, though, Merchant's proposal would also allow a four-way allomorphy pattern in which different stem variants would be used in active.imperfective vs. nonactive.imperfective. This, however, does not seem to be attested in Modern Greek. In other words, his proposal may be too permissive. More specifically, not only is there maximally three-way stem allomorphy, but all such cases exhibit the same conditionning contexts. Furthermore the conditioning contexts in the two-way allomorphy cases forms a subset of the three-way pattern. In particular, there is no case of sensitivity to [±active] in the imperfective. On Merchant's account, there is no reason to expect this asymmetry.

In the next section, I will briefly outline an alternative which allows only up to a three-way allomorphy pattern, excluding the unattested fourth case.[5]

3   An XP-alternative

Key to the limitation to a three-way allomorphy pattern is, I believe, the observation that, while indeed stem selection shows sensitivity to both Aspect (perfective vs imperfective) and Voice (active vs nonactive), the Voice-sensitivity is limited to one of the values of the aspectual contrast. Concretely, stem selection is sensitive to the [±active] Voice distinction only in the perfective. On Merchant's analysis this is accidental. I will try to provide a rationale for it.

I will, without discussion, adopt Merchant's (and hence indirectly Rivero's 1990) data structural lay of the land, in particular, the syntactic hierarchy in ((2)a), the treatment of perfective and imperfective as the two values of the same syntactic head Aspect[6], and the overt morphological segmentation (i.e. the proposal that *-ik-* spells out [perfective] in [-active] ___ [+past] environments, and that -θ- spells out [-active] in [perfective] environments[7]).

---
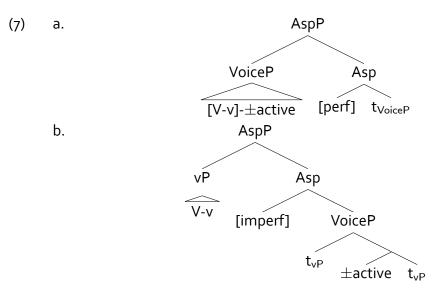
[5]Christopoulos & Petrosino (2017) propose another account of the Merchant facts, respecting strict adjacency by making use of post-syntactic re-bracketing. Their proposal is, however, inert relative to the limitation to the three-way allomorphy pattern I observe.

[6]Abandoning this assumption might allow for a more elegant variant of my alternative, but it would also require a more spacious elaboration.

[7]These relevant contexts are all linearly adjacent to the lexicalisation target on my proposal,

What I crucially reject from his proposal is the idea that the inflected verb corresponds to a complex syntactic head derived by head-movement. Instead I assume verb movement to be XP-movement (Koopman & Szabolcsi 2000, Mahajan 2003). More concretely, the verb moves qua vP or VoiceP (or...), i.e. in a successive-cyclic or a roll-up fashion (Cinque 2005).[8]

Let me propose that Modern Greek distinguishes perfective and imperfective in its syntactic derivation: $Asp_{perfective}$ attracts Voice(P), but $Asp_{imperfective}$ attracts vP, rather than Voice.[9]

(7) a.

```
                    AspP
              ┌──────┴──────┐
           VoiceP          Asp
          ┌───┴───┐      ┌───┴───┐
    [V-v]-±active      [perf]  t_VoiceP
```

  b.

```
                 AspP
           ┌──────┴──────┐
          vP            Asp
        ┌─┴─┐        ┌────┴────┐
       V-v         [imperf]  VoiceP
                          ┌────┴────┐
                        t_vP    ┌───┴───┐
                              ±active  t_vP
```

Furthermore, $Asp_{imperfective}$ seems to have the property of hiding from PF everything its mother dominates (i.e. itself and its complement), cf. Merchant (2001) on sluicing.[10]

On this proposal, out of the four logically possible feature combinations (as-

---

ignoring traces.

[8]For the present discussion, the crucial difference between XP-movement and head movement emerges on the standard assumption that head movement disallows excorporation. If that assumption is abandoned, my proposal can be mimicked in head movement terms.

[9]It may not be accidental that it is the imperfective - aspect which references "the internal temporal structure of the [event]" (Comrie 1976: 24) - that requires a closer syntactic relation with vP, i.e. with the event.

[10]An effect being that there is no overt mirror principle violation. The fact that the relevant heads are non-overt in the configuration in which their overtness would violate the mirror (i.e. imperfective everywhere and voice in the imperfective) may well suggest a more principled analysis of this correlation, perhaps in terms of phrasal spellout (cf. Starke 2009, Caha 2009). I will leave this for other (occasion)s.
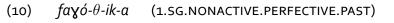
suming, as Merchant does, a binary Voice and a binary Aspect opposition) exactly three strictly linear stem adjacency possibilities are derivable (8). The linearly adjacent environment of the verb stem is identical in (8c) and (8d):
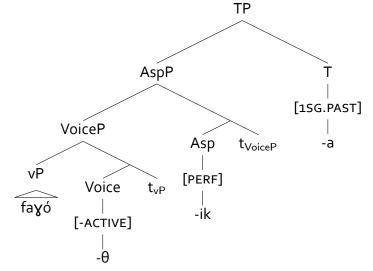
(8) a. [V+v] - [Voice$_{active}$] - [Aspect$_{perfective}$]
     b. [V+v] - [Voice$_{non-active}$] - [Aspect$_{perfective}$]
     c. [V+v] - [Aspect$_{imperfective}$] - [Voice$_{active}$]
     d. [V+v] - [Aspect$_{imperfective}$] - [Voice$_{non-active}$]

Therefore at most a three-way allomorphy pattern is admissible under strict linear adjacency.
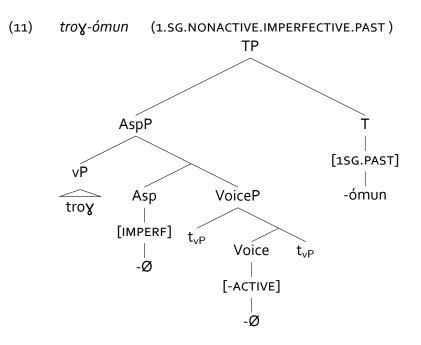
(9) a. $\sqrt{EAT} \rightarrow$ fa(ɣ) / _____ Voice[+act]
     b. $\sqrt{EAT} \rightarrow$ faɣo / _____ Voice[-act]
     c. $\sqrt{EAT} \rightarrow$ tro(ɣ)   *(elsewhere)*

In the imperfective, the stem is not adjacent to Voice and hence the elsewhere form is used. To enhance clarity, please consult the tree diagrams for the 1.SG.NONACTIVE.PERFECTIVE.PAST form *faɣó-θ-ik-a* (8b)=(9b) in (10),

(10) *faɣó-θ-ik-a*   (1.SG.NONACTIVE.PERFECTIVE.PAST)

and for the 1.SG.NONACTIVE.IMPERFECTIVE.PAST form *troɣ-ómun* (8d)=(9c) in (11).

(11)   *troɣ-ómun*   (1.SG.NONACTIVE.IMPERFECTIVE.PAST)

```
                            TP
                   _____/  _____
                AspP                    T
            ___/  \___                  |
          vP          \            [1SG.PAST]
         /\            \                 |
       troɣ           / \             -ómun
                    Asp   VoiceP
                     |    /    \
                 [IMPERF] t_vP   \
                     |        /  \
                    -Ø     Voice  t_vP
                             |
                         [-ACTIVE]
                             |
                            -Ø
```

This analysis makes a second prediction, essentially a flip-side prediction of the first: Given that T is linearly adjacent to Aspect in the perfective, and linearly adjacent to Voice in the imperfective, it seems natural to expect the possibility of allomorphy in T (tense-agreement) to be sensitive to a [±active] Voice contrast in the imperfective but not in the perfective. This is illustrated here by the 1SG.PAST forms of the verb *tróo 'I eat'* in (12)–(13), comparing the tense-agreement forms (following Merchant taken as fusional, which may be too simplistic) across the four cells of the ±active and ±perfective dimension.

(12)   Imperfective (1SG.PAST, *'eat'*)

   a.   ACTIVE: é-troɣ-a
   b.   NON-ACTIVE: troɣ-**ómun**

(13)   Perfective (1SG.PAST, *'eat'*)

   a.   ACTIVE: é-faɣ-a
   b.   NON-ACTIVE: faɣó-θ-ik-a

The non-active imperfective (12b) is the odd one out. Since only in the imperfective is T linearly adjacent to Voice on my proposal (cf. (11)), this can be suppletion conditioned by [-active] Voice, assuming that the morphosyntactic features stick around for another while after VI. The pattern seems to be rather pervasive in Greek verbal morphology across different conjugation classes and different

tenses.[11] Whether this prediction withstands more detailed scrutiny, only such scrutiny will be able to tell.

4 Conclusion

Modern Greek verb stem allomorphy shows sensitivity to perfective vs imperfective Aspect, and within perfective Aspect to the [±active] Voice distinction. On the assumption that Verb, Voice, and Aspect are individuel syntactic heads in that (hierarchical) order, the sensitivity to both Voice and Aspect has been taken argued, by Merchant, to show the need to loosen the locality restrictions on the conditioning of vocabulary insertion from strict linear *node* adjacency to *span* adjacency.

   Observing that the observable allomorphy patterns do not exploit the full potential of diversity allowed under Merchant's approach, but instead systematically fail to distinguish [±active] Voice in the imperfective, I propose an analysis in which the verb stem is linearly adjacent to Voice only in the perfective, and is adjacent to Aspect in the imperfective. On this analysis, strict linear adjacency in allomorph selection without reference to spans can be maintained.

   The contrast in linear adjacency is derived on the assumption that word formation is accomplished syntactically, by XP-movement, in conjunction with the proposal that Voice attracts vP, perfective Aspect attracts VoiceP, and, crucially, imperfective Aspect attracts vP.

   The proposal may catch a second fly on the same boat, providing the beginning of a principled approach to the generalization that the tense-agreement exponent shows sensitivity to nonactive in the imperfective but not in the perfective.

References

Abels, K. & Muriungi, P. 2008. The focus particle in Kîîtharaka: Syntax and semantics. *Lingua* 118. 687–731.

Bobaljik, J. 2000. The ins and outs of contextual allomorphy. In K. Grohmann & C. Struijke (eds.), *University of Maryland Working Papers in Linguistics*, vol. 10. 35–71.

---

[11]I'm grateful to Arhonto Terzi for very helpful confirmation of this prediction.

Bobaljik, J. 2012. *Universals in comparative morphology. Suppletion, superlatives, and the structure of words*. Cambridge, Mass.: MITPress.

Brody, M. 2000. Mirror theory 31(1). 29–56.

Caha, P. 2009. *The nanosyntax of case*: University of Tromsø dissertation.

Christopoulos, C. & Petrosino, R. 2017. Greek root allomorphy without spans. In *Proceedings of WCCFL 35*.

Cinque, G. 2005. Deriving Greenberg's Universal 20 and its Exceptions 36. 315–332.

Comrie, B. 1976. *Aspect*. Cambridge University Press.

Embick, D. 2010. *Localism versus globalism in morphology and phonology*. Cambridge, Mass.: MIT Press.

Koopman, H. & Szabolcsi, A. 2000. *Verbal complexes*. MIT Press.

Mahajan, A. 2003. Word order and (remnant) VP movement. In S. Karimi (ed.), *Word order and scrambling*. 217–237. Oxford: Blackwell.

Merchant, J. 2001. *The syntax of silence: Sluicing, islands and the theory of ellipsis*. Oxford University Press.

Merchant, J. 2015. How much context is enough? Two cases of span-conditionned stem allomorphy. *Linguistic Inquiry* 46(273–303).

Pearson, M. 1999. X(P)-movement and word order typology. 'direct' vs. 'inverse' languages. GLOW handout.

Pollock, J.Y. 1989. Verb movement, Universal Grammar, and the structure of IP. 20(3). 365–424.

Rivero, M.L. 1990. The locatio of nonactive voice in Albanian and modern Greek. *Linguistic Inquiry* 21. 135–146.

Starke, M. 2009. Nanosyntax. A short primer to a new approach to language. *Nordlyd* 36(1). 1–6.

Svenonius, P. 2012. Spanning. Ms. Tromsø.

Taraldsen, T.K. 2010. The nanosyntax of Nguni noun class prefixes and concords. *Lingua* 120. 1522–1548.

Multilingualism as the new comparative syntax

Terje Lohndal

1   A model of a linguist

Liliane Haegeman has made groundbreaking and lasting contributions to the study of grammar, and it is a great pleasure to be able to honor such a wonderful linguist and friend by way of a small contribution in the present festschrift. Her work is characterized by its focus on argumentation, rigor, and theoretical perspicuousness. During her career, she has covered a range of areas in addition to 'core' syntax, as also emphasized in another festschrift (Aboh et al. 2017: 3): Dialect variation, register variation, first and second language acquisition. Her work on comparative syntax can be characterized as she herself characterizes the field, where emphasis should be put on the very last sentence in the quote.

> An important development in generative syntax over the last fifteen years is the revival of the interest in the comparative study of language. In fact, a major criticism leveled against early generative grammar concerned its central interest for conceptual problems often to the detriment of the empirical study of language. When empirical data were considered, this was often only to serve a theoretical point, and in the analyses a small range of data of only a handful of languages was taken into account, standard English occupying a central position among the languages under examination. Over the past twenty years, we have witnessed a surge of comparative work along various dimensions. In this new comparative syntax, careful study of empirical data takes a central position with a

stimulating two-way interaction between theoretical developments and empirical study. (Haegeman 1997: 1)

This quote highlights the importance of a close interplay between description and theory as they both depend on each other. This interdependence has always been crystal clear in Liliane's work as she has worked to identify the linguistic properties that can vary across languages and those that are constant. This puts her work firmly into the generative tradition trying to unearth what knowledge of language is and how this knowledge can be acquired. As she continues in her already quoted chapter, "The question of acquisition focuses on the issue of how much of our linguistic knowledge is due to experience, the linguistic input provided by the environment we are exposed to, and how much is due to a predetermined mental faculty" (Haegeman 1997: 1).

Methodologically, her work has made use of several different methods. Since her earliest work (Haegeman 1983), she has been a keen consumer of naturally occurring data, which she has either accessed through corpora or gathered herself. She has of course also relied heavily on acceptability judgments both in investigating her native West Flemish but also in her investigations of English.

Liliane's work has always highlighted how linguistic competence needs to be investigated broadly, and how different sources of data speak to different aspects of this competence. And she has set a high standard for the tight relationship between empirical generalizations and theoretical analysis. With that in mind, the next section will try to say something about one aspect of current developments, which in many ways can be viewed as an integral part of the work on comparative syntax that the quote from Haegeman (1997) highlights.

2   The formal grammar of multilingualism

Comparative syntax has been the zeitgeist of formal grammar since the early 1980's. In recent years, we may say that a new zeitgeist has emerged. It is not the only zeitgeist, but it is one of several, and it is the formal study of multilingual data. Traditionally, multilingualism has not been at the core of formal generative studies. This is among others made clear in the following famous quote:

Linguistic theory is concerned primarily with an ideal speaker-listener, in a completely homogeneous speech-community, who knows its language perfectly and is unaffected by such

> grammatically irrelevant conditions as memory limitations,
> distractions, shifts of attention and interest, and errors (ran-
> dom or characteristic) in applying his knowledge of the lan-
> guage in actual performance (Chomsky 1965: 3).

It was always clear that this was an idealization - no one thought that such an ideal speaker-listener or such a speech-community actually existed. However, it was a very useful idealization as it made it easier to develop theories of complex empirical phenomena. It enabled the grammarian to abstract away from issues that would make it hard to extract generalizations and then start to develop descriptively adequate grammar fragments.

It took some time, but eventually work on second language acquisition was established within a generative frame. Whether the logical problem of language acquisition applied to the acquisition of an additional language in adulthood, was one of the main goals of the early research in this area, see e.g., Clahsen & Muysken (1986), Flynn (1987), Schwartz (1987), Bley-Vroman (1989), White (1989), Schachter (1990). Put differently, do language-specific constraints reduce the hypothesis space in learning a second language, similarly to what is argued to be the case for first language acquisition? Textbooks such as Hawkins (2001), White (2003) and Slabakova (2016) document the success of this approach, and (Rothman & Slabakova 2017) is a state-of-the-art paper outlining the changes in generative approaches to second language acquisition over the years and connecting them to the current prominent approaches and trends. Recently, third language acquisition has also become a produtive area of investigation within formal models, cf. e.g., Rothman (2011, 2015) and Westergaard et al. (2016) and references therein for discussions and comparisons of different models.

Another area which departed from the idealization, focused on whether or not there are formal constraints on code-switching or language mixing (e.g., Pfaff (1979), Poplack (1980), Sankoff & Poplack (1981), Woolford (1983), Di Sciullo et al. (1986), Belazi et al. (1994), MacSwan (1999, 2000, 2005), Muysken (2000, 2015), Myers-Scotton (2002), van Gelderen & MacSwan (2008), González-Vilbazo & López (2011, 2012), see MacSwan (2014) for a review and see Riksem (2018) for additional discussion). Studying language mixing may provide us with a typology of what elements are possible to mix and which are resistant (to various degrees) to mixing across languages. The following quote from Riksem (2018: 43) emphasizes this point:

In general, language mixing may constitute a potential window into our language capacity; the conditions and restrictions on language mixing can tell us which linguistic elements are possible to mix, and whether some are more available or resistant to mixing than others. Thus, studies of language mixing may refine and deepen our understanding of grammatical theory (Muysken 2000, Gardner-Chloros 2009, González-Vilbazo et al. 2013).

By way of illustration, let us consider mixing between English and Norwegian. I will use examples from the heritage language American Norwegian spoken in the USA (see Haugen (1953) for an extensive presentation of the language and its background). The specific examples here are drawn from the Corpus of American Nordic Speech (CANS; Johannessen (2015)). Consider ((1)) first.

(1) a. Jeg **teach**-a   # fø**grad[e]**-en
         I   teach-PAST # first   # grade-DEF.M.SG
         'I taught the first grade.'
     b. Så   kan du **mow**-e   litt   **lawn**
         then can you mow-INF some lawn.INDEF.SG
         'Then you can mow some lawn.' (coon_valley_WI_07gk)

These examples illustrate a typological generalization (see also Åfarli (2015) and Riksem et al. (In press) on American Norwegian): One of the language is the language providing the grammatical structure, whereas lexical items can come from either language. This can be seen clearly in ((1)b), where the structure of the sentence exhibits Verb Second (V2; see Eide & Hjelde (2015) and Westergaard & Lohndal (2018) for more on V2 in American Norwegian). There are also additional examples showing that English lexical items can appear in structures that are clearly Norwegian.

(2) a. Å **celebrat[e]**-e **birthday**-en   hennes
         to celebrat-INF   birthday-DEF.M.SG her
         'To celebrate her birthday.' (coon_valley_WI_06gm)
     b. etter middag-en   # vi # satt på **deck**-en   hans
         after dinner-DEF.M.SG # we # sat on deck-DEF.M.SG his
         'After dinner, we sat on his deck.' (westby_WI_01gm)

In both of the examples in ((2)), the speakers are clearly using a Norwegian struc-

ture for possessives: The possessive is post-nominal, and the nominal, even if the lexical item is English, has the Norwegian definiteness marker. A syntactic theory needs to be able to account for this, and a theory assuming that the syntactic structure is based on the lexical items itself would not be a descriptively adequate theory as it would predict that the structure should be English, not Norwegian. Space does not allow me to elaborate on what such a theory could look like, the reader can consult Grimstad et al. (2014), Riksem (2018), Grimstad et al. (In press) and Riksem et al. (In press) for one alternative.

3   Conclusion

Work on second language acquisition and aspects of language mixing shows that formal approaches also have a lot to contribute when it comes to multilingual data. In many ways, they complement more traditional work focusing on variation between varieties, but instead of looking at variation *between* individuals, they look at variation *within* individuals. They help us to create better models of our language competence and its scope. As such, they may constitute the new comparative syntax in the years to come, trying to follow the very high standards set by Liliane Haegeman and others.

References

Aboh, E., Haeberli, E., Puskás, G. & Schönenberger, M. (eds.). 2017. *Elements of Comparative Syntax: Theory and Description*. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Åfarli, T.A. 2015. A Syntactic Model for the Analysis of Language Mixing Phenomena: American Norwegian and Beyond. In B.R. Page & M.T. Putnam (eds.), *Moribound Germanic Heritage Languages in North America: Theoretical Perspectives and Empirical Findings*. 12–33. Leiden: Brill.

Belazi, H.M., Rubin, E.J. & Toribio, A.J. 1994. Code Switching and X-Bar Theory. *Linguistic Inquiry* 25. 221–237.

Bley-Vroman, R. 1989. What is the logical problem for foreign language learning? *Linguistic Perspectives on Second Language Acquisition* 4. 1–68.

Chomsky, N. 1965. *Aspects of the Theory of Syntax*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Clahsen, H. & Muysken, P. 1986. The availability of universal grammar to adult and child learners: a study of the acquisition of German word order. *Second Language Research* 2. 93–119.

Di Sciullo, A.M., Muysken, P. & Singh, R. 1986. Government and Code-Mixing. *Journal of Linguistics* 22. 1–24.

Eide, K.M. & Hjelde, A. 2015. Verb Second and Finiteness Morphology in Norwegian Heritage Language of the American Midwest. In B.R. Page & M.T. Putnam (eds.), *Moribound Germanic Heritage Languages in North America: Theoretical Perspectives and Empirical Findings*. 64–101. Leiden: Brill.

Flynn, S. 1987. Contrast and Construction in a Parameter-Setting Model of L2 Acquisition. *Language Learning* 37. 19–62.

Gardner-Chloros, P. 2009. *Code-switching*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

van Gelderen, E. & MacSwan, J. 2008. Interface conditiond and code-switching: Pronouns, lexical DPs, and checking theory. *Lingua* 118. 765–776.

González-Vilbazo, K., Bartlett, L., Downey, S., Ebert, S., Heil, J., Hoot, B., Koronkiewicz, B. & Ramos, S. 2013. Methodological Considerations in Code-Switching Research. *Studies in Hispanic and Lusophone Linguistics* 6. 119–138.

González-Vilbazo, K. & López, L. 2011. Some properties of light verbs in code-switching. *Lingua* 121. 832–850.

González-Vilbazo, K. & López, L. 2012. Little v and parametric variation. *Natural Language & Linguistic Theory* 30. 33–77.

Grimstad, M.B., Lohndal, T. & Åfarli, T.A. 2014. Language mixing and exoskeletal theory: A case study of word-internal mixing in american norwegian. *Nordlyd* 41. 213–237.

Grimstad, M.B., Riksem, B.R., Lohndal, T. & Åfarli, T.A. In press. Lexicalist vs. exoskeletal approaches to language mixing. *The Linguistic Review* .

Haegeman, L. 1983. *The semantics of will in present-day English: A unified account*. Brussels: Royal Academy of Sciences, Letters and Arts of Belgium.

Haegeman, L. 1997. Introduction: on the interaction of theory and description in syntax. In L. Haegeman (ed.), *The New Comparative Syntax*. 1–32. London: Longman.

Haugen, E. 1953. *The Norwegian Language in America: A Study in Bilingual Behavior*. Philadelphia: University of Philadelphia Press.

Hawkins, R. 2001. *Second language syntax: a generative introduction*. Oxford: Blackwell.

Johannessen, J.B. 2015. The Corpus of American Norwegian Speech (CANS). In B. Megyesi (ed.), *Proceedings of the 20th Nordic Conference of Computational Linguistics (NODALIDA 2015)*. 297–300. Sweden: Linköping University Electronic Press.

MacSwan, J. 1999. *A minimalist approach to intra-sentential code-switching*. New York: Garland.

MacSwan, J. 2000. The architecture of the bilingual faculty: Evidence from intrasentential code switching. *Bilingualism: Language and Cognition* 3. 37–54.

MacSwan, J. 2005. Codeswitching and generative grammar: A critique of the MLF model and some remarks on "modified minimalism". *Bilingualism: Language and Cognition* 8. 1–22.

MacSwan, J. 2014. Programs and Proposals in Codeswitching Research: Unconstraining Theories of Bilingual Language Mixing. In J. MacSwan (ed.), *Grammatical Theory and Bilingual Codeswitching*. 1–33. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Muysken, P. 2000. *Bilingual Speech. A Typology of Code-Mixing*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Muysken, P. 2015. Déjà VooDoo or New Trails Ahead? Re-evaluating the Mixing Typology Model. In R.T. Cacoullos, N. Dion & A. Lapierre (eds.), *Linguistic Variation: Confronting Fact and Theory*. 242–261. New York: Routledge.

Myers-Scotton, C. 2002. *Contact Linguistics: Bilingual Encounters and Grammatical Outcomes*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Pfaff, C.W. 1979. Constraints on Language Mixing: Intrasentential Code-Switching and Borrowing in Spanish/English. *Language* 55. 291–318.

Poplack, S. 1980. "sometimes I'll start a sentence in Spanish Y TERMINO EN ESPAÑOL": Toward a typology of code-switching. *Linguistics* 18. 581–618.

Riksem, B.R. 2018. *Language mixing in American Norwegian noun phrases. An exoskeletal analysis of synchronic and diachronic patterns*: NTNU Norwegian University of Science and Technology dissertation.

Riksem, B.R., Grimstad, M.B., Lohndal, T. & Åfarli, T.A. In press. Language mixing within verbs and nouns in American Norwegian. *Journal of Comparative Germanic Linguistics* .

Rothman, J. 2011. L3 syntactic transfer selectivity and typological determinacy: The typological primacy model. *Second Language Research* 27. 107–127.

Rothman, J. 2015. Linguistic and cognitive motivations for the typological primacy model (TPM) of third language (L3) transfer: Timing of acquisition and proficiency considered. *Bilingualism: Language and Cognition* 18. 179–190.

Rothman, J. & Slabakova, R. 2017. The generative approach to SLA and its place in modern second language studies. *Studies in Second Language Acquisition* 1–26.

Sankoff, D. & Poplack, S. 1981. A formal grammar for code-switching. *Research on Language and Social Interaction* 14. 3–45.

Schachter, J. 1990. On the issue of completeness in second language acquisition. *Second Language Research* 6. 93–124.

Schwartz, B.D. 1987. *The modular basis of second language acquisition*: University of Southern California dissertation.

Slabakova, R. 2016. *Second Language Acquisition*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Westergaard, M. & Lohndal, T. 2018. Verb second word order in Norwegian heritage language: Syntax and pragmatics. In D.W. Lightfoot & J. Havenhill (eds.), *Variable properties in language: Their nature and acquisition*. Washington, D.C.: Georgetown University Press.

Westergaard, M., Mitrofanoca, N., Mykhaylyk, R. & Rodina, Y. 2016. Crosslinguistic influence in the acquisition of a third language: The Linguistic Proximity Model. *International Journal of Bilingualism* 21. 666–682.

White, L. 1989. *Universal grammar and second language acquisition*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

White, L. 2003. *Second Language Acquisition and Universal Grammar*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Woolford, E. 1983. Bilingual Code-Switching and Syntactic Theory. *Linguistic Inquiry* 14. 520–536.

To Liliane, with appreciation

Shigeru Miyagawa

I first met Liliane in Japan when she came to give a talk at Kanda University of International Studies. With Memo Cinque and others, we toured Tokyo together and quickly became friends. And the friendship blossomed into professional collaboration, including co-organizing a LSA panel on MCP and jointly giving a plenary talk at GLOW.

Around the time that we met, I had completed the manuscript for *Why Agree? Why Move?*, which was published as a Linguistic Inquiry monograph in 2010. I proposed Strong Uniformity, an instantiation of Chomsky's (2001) Uniformity Principle; SU states that every language shares the same set of grammatical features, and each language manifests these features in some fashion. When one makes a sweeping proposal of this sort, one quickly digs holes to fall into; a sign of a promising theory is that you can dig out of at least some of them.

A particularly embarrassing hole that I dug for myself was the prediction that Strong Uniformity made that a language such as Japanese has ϕ-feature agreement at C. This is embarrassing because Japanese is known as a prototypical agreementless language. Everyone knows this! But predictions are predictions – I either show that it is borne out despite all appearance to the contrary, or abandon the project. In attempting to address this problem, Liliane's work on the MCP came into sharp focus. I was trying to argue that the politeness marking in Japanese (-*mas*-) is second-person agreement at C, because it "agrees" with the hearer, and it occurs at C Miyagawa (1987). The politeness marking is an MCP. But it is one thing to stipulate that the politeness marking is ϕ-feature agreement, something else altogether to show that it is a credible way to view it as such. The big breakthrough came when Liliane invited me to give a presentation at the 2010 Ghent workshop on clause-typing and main clause phenomena. In searching for a topic to discuss, I discovered data from Basque (courtesy of Karlos Arregi) that gave credence to the idea that the politeness marking in Japanese is 2nd person agreement, and it is at C.

The so-called allocutive agreement in certain Basque dialects agrees with the

hearer, thus it is always 2nd person, despite the fact that there is no 2nd person entity in any of the argument positions Oyharçabal (1993). The allocutive is a regular form of agreement, as shown by the fact that it competes for position with the "regular" 2nd person agreement. Its function is politeness (formal/colloquial), and it occurs at C. In fact, Oyharȝabal, who wrote the article on allocutive agreement, refers to an earlier article of mine (Miyagawa 1987) and observes that the allocutive agreement in Basque has essentially the same distribution as the politeness marking in Japanese. I remember that Liliane was quite excited about the data, which gave me confidence that I'm onto something. I got to publish this work in the collection of papers from the workshop (*Main Clause Phenomena: New Horizons*, 2012) that was co-edited by Liliane. The phenomenon of allocutive agreement is novel in generative grammar, and a number of linguists picked it up after the publication of the book and produced interesting studies using a variety of languages. One of them was Vera Zu, who completed a Ph.D. dissertation on the topic in 2017 that substantially extended the idea of allocutive agreement beyond Basque and Japanese. Encouraged by the discovery of allocutive agreement, I myself went on to write a second LI monograph, *Agreement beyond phi*, which was published in 2017.

Liliane and I collaborated on two big projects, both stemming from our mutual interest in main clause phenomena. We co-organized a Linguistic Society of America panel in 2013 which was held in Boston, and invited Jim Huang, Luigi Rizzi, and Raffaella Zanuttini to join us. In 2016, we gave a joint plenary talk at GLOW 39 held at the University of Göttingen. In that talk, Liliane went over some of the major achievements of her enormous project on main clause phenomena dating back to the early 2000's, while I introduced the notion of allocutive agreement and its implications for linguistic theory. It was one of the most enjoyable talks I've ever given, and certainly one that I learned a great deal from thanks to Liliane.

I cherish my friendship with Liliane, and I am deeply grateful to her for bringing me into her world of linguistic study that she helped to pioneer. It has certainly been rewarding for me, not the least of which is because I got to work with her.

References

Miyagawa, S. 1987. LF affix raising in japanese. *Linguistic Inquiry* 18. 362–367.
Oyharçabal, B.n. 1993. Verb agreement with non arguments: On allocutive

agreement.   In J.I. Hualde & J. Ortiz de Urbina (eds.), *Generative studies in Basque linguistics*. 89–114. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Zu, V. 2017. *Discourse participants and the structural representation of the context*: New York University dissertation.

Hoe cool is dat wel niet!
How pseudo-questions and expletive negation in Dutch

Rachel Nye and Lieven Danckaert[*]

1 Introduction

This paper focuses on the Dutch equivalents to structures such as (1), referred to by Nye (2009, 2011) as *how*-pseudo questions (HPQs). On the surface, HPQs resemble how degree questions (HDQs) (2), but combine the surface word order of a matrix question with an interpretation more usually associated with exclamative structures.[1]

(1)   How cool is that!   HPQ

(2)   How old is he?   HDQ

As shown in (3) and (4), very similar structures are also available in Dutch:

(3)   Hoe cool is dat!   HPQ
       how cool is that

---

[*]There is much that we could – and would like to – say in tribute to Liliane, both in terms of her contribution to the field of linguistics, and regarding the support that she has provided us both with. Taking the saying "actions speak louder than words" to heart, a revival for this particular occasion of the former 'PhD student + Postdoc buddy' team established by Liliane during the early GIST days seemed the most suitable way to convey these sentiments. The connections this paper shows to Liliane's work, in terms of the languages studied, the linguistic topics touched upon and the approach taken to the data should be apparent throughout.

[1] Throughout this paper, in constructed examples or examples from a spoken language source, we punctuate HDQs with a question mark and HPQs with an exclamation mark. In attested written examples, there is considerable variability in how HPQs are punctuated (as discussed by Nye (2009) for English), and the original punctuation is maintained when such examples are reproduced. Punctuation proves an equally poor indication for determining the HPQ vs. HDQ status of a given string in Dutch as it does in English.

'How cool is that!'

(4)   Hoe oud is hij?   HDQ
        how old is he
        'How old is he?'

HPQs are common in contemporary English and Dutch, and they differ from what one could call 'standard exclamatives', such as English (5) and Dutch (6), in two important respects. First, HPQs are more colloquial, whereas the exclamatives in (5) and (6) are primarily associated with a more formal register. Second, only HPQs have a string-identical interrogative counterpart.

(5)   a.   How tall that building is!
        b.   What a tall building that is!

(6)   a.   Wat is dat gebouw hoog!
              what is that building high
        b.   Wat is dat een hoog gebouw!
              what is that a   high building
              'How tall that building is!'

Our first aim is to offer a description of the Dutch HPQ pattern exemplified in (3). Concretely, we show that Dutch and English HPQs have very similar properties: in line with Nye (2009, 2011) we argue that despite the apparent surface resemblances, HPQs do in fact differ structurally from HDQs, in Dutch as well as in English. On the basis of this we conclude that the interpretive properties of HPQs cannot be explained as a pragmatic effect arising from the use of a HDQ in a particular context. Rather, the difference in interpretation of HPQs and HDQs results from a difference in the underlying syntax of these two structures. As a result, despite the presence of subject-auxiliary inversion in both (1) and (2), HPQs are best categorised as a type of exclamative, rather than as interrogatives.

Secondly, on the basis of the Dutch data we develop a new argument for the claim that HPQs should be distinguished structurally from HDQs, which goes beyond those already put forward by Nye (2009). In particular, we demonstrate that in Dutch HPQs it is possible for the sentential negator *niet* 'not' to occur, without any of the negative force with which it is typically associated. The fact that this type of 'expletive negation' is not available in Dutch HDQs again suggests that HPQs and HDQs do not have the same syntactic structure, despite typically having the same word order.

Section 2 of this paper briefly recapitulates the main arguments put forward

by Nye (2009, 2011) on the basis of English HPQs for the claim that HPQs are structurally distinct from HPQs, and applies these to Dutch HPQs. In section 3, the phenomenon of expletive negation in Dutch HPQs is discussed and in section 4, HPQs and other inverted exclamatives are compared to rhetorical questions. Section 5 suggests directions for future research and section 6 concludes.

2 Distinguishing HPQs from HDQs

Nye (2009) provides evidence to show that although HPQs can be string-identical to HDQs, HPQs differ from HDQs both in interpretation and, in some cases, in form. Three key properties identified by Nye (2009) as distinguishing HPQs from HDQs are applied to the Dutch data, with the same results shown to hold for Dutch as for English.

2.1 Questions

First, HDQs introduce a question into the discourse, whereas HPQs do not. For example, a HDQ can felicitously be used in the exchange in (7), where A's utterance is a genuine information-seeking question, to which the B's reply constitutes a pragmatically appropriate answer.

(7)   A: Signalen worden door de   satelliet verstuurd met de   snelheid van
                signals   become by   the satellite sent   with the speed   of
                het licht.
                the light
                Hoe snel is dit   (uitgedrukt in km/sec)?[2]
                how fast is this expressed   in kilometres per second
        B: 300.000 km   per seconde.
                300,000 kilometres per second
                '300,000 kilometres per second.'

In contrast, as shown in (8), HPQs are incompatible with an answer that provides a piece of new information. This is of course not to say that they cannot

---

[2]`https://www.google.com/url?sa=t&rct=j&q=&esrc=s&source=web&cd=` `30&ved=0ahUKEwisrKbn3vvbAhVEZVAKHdYLDlw4FBAWCF0wCQ&url=https%3A%2F%` `2Fwww.uhasselt.be%2FDocuments%2Fuhasselt%40school%2Flesmateriaal%` `2Fverkeerskunde%2FGPS_stellingenspel.ppt&usg=AOvVaw3a4QEUghfeLUlfnDcyrZyQ.` Last accessed 30.06.2018.

be replied to at all. A response indicating agreement with the speaker's assessment, such as the one in (8B'), is typically felicitous.

(8) A: Wow hoe snel is dit![3]
         wow how fast is this
         'Wow, how fast is this!'
     B: #Wel, het heeft precies   2 uur   en   5 minuten geduurd.
         well it   has   precisely 2 hours and 5 minutes lasted
         'Well, it took exactly 2 hours and 5 minutes.'
     B': Ja, inderdaad, dat was echt snel.
          yes indeed   that was really fast
          'Yes indeed, that was really fast.'

We can conclude that while HDQs have interrogative illocutionary force, HPQs do not. However, on a par with *bona fide* exclamatives (cf. Portner & Zanuttini 2000), nor do HPQs have the same distribution as declaratives, as attested to by the fact that they cannot felicitously be used to answer a question, a point exemplified by the dialogue in (9):

(9) A: Werd   het pakket snel   afgeleverd?   Question
         became the parcel quickly delivered
         'Was the parcel delivered quickly?'
     B: #Hoe snel was dat!   HPQ
         how fast was that
         'How fast was that!'
     B: #Wat   was dat snel!   *Wh*-exclamative
         what was that fast
         'How fast that was!'
     C: (Ja,) de levering was echt   snel.   Declarative answer
         yes the delivery was really fast
         '(Yes,) the delivery was really fast.'

This suggests that the HPQ pattern is in fact a type of exclamative.

---

[3]https://www.agrolingua.com/nl/klanten-over-ons?pagenr=11.   Last accessed 30.06.2018.

2.2 Evaluativity

Another property shared by genuine *wh*-exclamatives and HPQs is the fact that both show polarity-insensitive evaluativity, which HDQs do not. The concept of evaluativity (in the realm of adjectival constructions) is defined in Rett (2015: 1) as follows: "[an] adjectival construction is evaluative iff it makes reference to a degree which exceeds a contextually valued standard". Adjectival predicates in HPQs do seem to qualify as evaluative expressions: whereas HDQs ask about the extent to which the property expressed by the adjective holds, HPQs exclaim about the fact that this property holds to a great extent. For example, in the example in (10) it is presupposed that the Herengracht is beautiful; what is asserted is that it is indeed very beautiful, prettier than other parts of Amsterdam at the same time of year, for instance.

(10)   Maar kijk eens aan: hoe mooi   is de Herengracht in de
        but   look once PRT   how beautiful is the Herengracht in the
        zomermaanden.[4]
        summermonths
        'But just look at that: how beautiful is the Herengracht during the sum-
        mer months!'

In contrast, no such effects are present in a regular HDQ such as (11) (which is the title of a government brochure about spatial planning). Not only does this question lack the presupposition that The Netherlands will be beautiful in the near future, given the interrogative semantics there is also no assertion that the country will score high on a scale of beauty.

(11)   Hoe mooi   is Nederland   morgen?[5]
        how beautiful is the.Netherlands tomorrow
        'How beautiful will The Netherlands be tomorrow?'

Following Rett (2011), we can conclude that Dutch HPQs behave like structures whose status as exclamatives is not debated in relation to the property of eval-uativity.

---

[4] `https://docplayer.nl/43797578-Olf-jacobs-en-liesbeth-smits-wonen-in-een-fraai-verbouwde-villa.html`. Last accessed 30.06.2018.

[5] `http://www.henkbouwmeester.com/?portfolio=hoe-mooi-is-nederland-morgen`. Last accessed 30.06.2018.

2.3   Intensifiers

Third, as observed in Nye (2009), HPQs – like exclamatives and in contrast to HDQs – can contain intensifiers such as *totally* and *incredibly* which modify the adjective in the *how*-phrase. The same holds for Dutch. Intensifiers such as *bangelijk* 'scarily', *kei-* 'very' (lit. 'boulder'), *verdomd* 'damn', *vet* 'fat', *vreselijk* 'terribly' and *fucking* (borrowed from English) can modify the adjective within the hoe-phrase in Dutch HPQs. Crucially, this is also the case for exclamatives, in contrast to HDQs, where such intensifiers are typically excluded.

(12)   a.   WTF hoe **vet** cool is da!!![6]
             WTF how fat cool is that
             'WTF, how very cool is that!'

        b.   Die blauwe op 1'50; hoe **bangelijk** goed ziet die   der uit zeg!!![7]
             that blue   at 1'50 how scarily   good sees that PRT PRT say
             'The blue one at 1:50; how scarily handsome does he look!'

        c.   Hoe **vreselijk** erg is het om het WEL te doen??[8]
             how terribly   bad is it   to it   PRT to do
             'How terribly bad is it to actually do it!'

        d.   En hoe **kei**cool is je   poncho geworden [...].[9]
             and how very.cool is your poncho become
             'And how cool has your poncho turned out to be!'

        e.   Hoe v**erdomd** geil   kan je   worden van sushi?[10]
             how damn   horny kan you become of   sushi
             'How damn horny can you get from sushi!'

        f.   HOE **FUCKING** COOL IS *GUARDIANS OF THE GALAXY VOL. 2*?!?[11]
             how fucking   cool is Guardians   of the Galaxy   vol. 2
             'How fucking cool is Guardians of the Galaxy vol. 2?!?'

---

[6]https://twitter.com/ruytersg/status/743023125420507136.   Last accessed 15.01.2018.

[7]https://forum.alfaclub.nl/viewtopic.php?t=44903&start=270. Last accessed 15.01.2018.

[8]https://www.ikenmama.nl/forum/forums/topic/je-kind-in-de-winkel-laten-eten/page/2/. Last accessed 15.01.2018.

[9]http://moos-moosies.blogspot.be/2014/01/een-nieuw-jaar-een-eerste-crea tie.html. Last accessed 15.01.2018.

[10]http://www.clint.be/entertainment/sexpiratie-nodig-hoe-verdomd-geil-wor den-sushi/. Last accessed 15.01.2018.

[11]http://vertigoweb.be/recensie-guardians-the-galaxy-2/.   Last   accessed

As shown in (13), none of the strings given in (12) can plausibly be coerced into a question (i.e. HDQ) interpretation:

(13)   a. *Hoe vet cool is da?
        b. *Hoe bangelijk goed ziet die der uit?
        c. *Hoe vreselijk erg is het om het WEL te doen?
        d. *En hoe keicool is je poncho geworden?
        e. *Hoe verdomd geil kan je worden van sushi?
        f. *HOE FUCKING COOL IS *GUARDIANS OF THE GALAXY VOL. 2*?

In other words, there are contexts in which HDQs and HPQs are in fact formally non-identical, which strongly suggests that the difference between the two patterns is not a matter of pragmatics alone. In the following section, we discuss an additional phenomenon which also differentiates Dutch HPQs from HDQs on formal grounds.

3   Expletive negation in exclamatives

Both Dutch and English are known to permit expletive negation – alternatively referred to as 'pleonastic negation', and defined as 'a lexically present but semantically vacuous negation' (Dinković & Ilc 2017: 159) – in certain structures (cf. Haegeman 1995: 160–161 for varieties of East and West Flemish, Espinal 2000: 65–66 for Standard Dutch, and Huddleston & Pullum 2002: 845–846, Horn 2010: 123–124, Collins & Postal 2014: 228, Dinković & Ilc 2017: 162 for English), including exclamatives. The presence of expletive negation in exclamative structures specifically has been observed in the literature for a range of languages (Portner & Zanuttini 2000, Espinal 2000, Andueza & Gutiérrez-Rexach 2010, Delfitto & Fiorin 2014, Biberauer & Potgieter 2017), though at present it is not yet fully understood what determines whether or not a particular exclamative structure licenses expletive negation.

For English, the observation that exclamatives can permit expletive negation dates back to Jespersen (1924: 323) who states that "in exclamations [...] very often it does not matter whether *not* is added or not", providing the example given here as (14) by way of support:

(14)   How often have I (not) watched him!

15.01.2018.

However, it is by no means the case that expletive negative is productively available in all present day English exclamatives (Jespersen's example is characterised by Horn (2010: 123) as "now somewhat quaint-sounding").[12] In the non-inverted equivalent (15), for instance, *not* seems to be excluded (at least when it is interpreted as expletive negation).

(15)   How often I have (*not) watched him!

The availability of expletive negation in Dutch exclamatives has been noted by Espinal (2000: 66), among others, who gives the following examples (her (32a,b)):

(16)   a.   Wat   heeft hij **niet** een vragen   gesteld!
             what has   he not   a   questions raised
             'He raised so many questions!'
        b.   Wat   heeft hij **niet** een ellende veroorzaakt!
             what has   he not   a   mess   caused
             'He created such a mess!'

The examples in (16) do not involve HPQs but rather 'standard' *wh*-exclamatives (see also (6)). Note that the (invariant, but possibly discontinuous) string *wat een (sg. or pl.) NP* (lit. 'what a NP') cannot be used in interrogative contexts, which disambiguates the structures in (16) from interrogatives.[13]

     Let us now turn to negation in HPQs. For English, Nye (2009: 18) provides the attested example presented here as (17). To the extent that such marginal cases are accepted, *not* has the expected force of sentential negation, negating the propositional content: (17) is an exclamation about the lack of vigilance. The interpretation and acceptability of negation in canonical non-inverted exclamatives seems to be similar (18). Sentential negation *not* seems even more marginal in HDQs (19).

(17)   ?How vigilant are they not!

---

[12] Inverted exclamatives such as (14) are differentiated from HPQs in terms of both prosody and register: inverted exclamatives such as (14) seem out-dated, formal and literary, much as the noninverted equivalent in (15) does, while HPQs, in contrast, are characteristic of contemporary, informal, colloquial speech. The possibility of expletive negation in inverted exclamatives but not HPQs in English, as discussed in this section, provides another piece of evidence in favour of the view that these structures should be distinguished.

[13] As such, although the English translations Espinal (2000) provides for (16a) and (16b) are declaratives, these could perhaps more accurately be rendered as 'What a lot of questions he raised!' and 'What a mess he caused!' respectively.

(18)   ?How vigilant they are not!

(19)   ??How vigilant are they not?

Although in many cases Dutch HPQs are string-identical to their English equiv-
alents, one striking difference is the ease with which *niet* 'not' can occur: some
speakers in fact have a preference for it to be present in HPQs. What is impor-
tant to note is that what we are dealing with here is expletive negation, that it is
to say 'the negation is not interpreted according to its canonical logical meaning'
(Delfitto & Fiorin 2014: 284). In fact, only on this interpretation are such cases
grammatical. Two attested examples are given in (20):

(20)   a.   Ik heb geen kind en ik wil   ook Disney. Hoe erg is dat **niet**?![14]
                 I   have no   child and I   want also Disney how bad is that not
                 'I don't have a child and I also want Disney. How bad is that!'
          b.   Een boek dat   zich om laat bouwen tot een flipperkast,
                 a   book which REFL PRT let's build   to a   pinball.machine
                 hoe leuk is dat **niet**?[15]
                 how cool is that not
                 'A book which can be transformed into a pinball machine, how cool
                 is that?

In these examples *niet* does not negate the truth of the propositional content
of the sentence, but rather appears to have an intensifying function (if any). The
crucial observation is that *niet* in Dutch HDQs – to the extent that it is acceptable
at all – can only be interpreted as conveying canonical sentential negation, on a
par with what can be observed for English.

(21)   a. ??Hoe erg is dat niet?
                 how bad is that not
                 'How bad is that not?'
          b. ??Hoe leuk is dat niet?
                 how nice is that not
                 'How nice is that not?'

Observe that Dutch HPQs are fully disambiguated from HDQs on formal grounds

---

[14]https://www.bigcitylife.be/2016/11/23/die-pressdays-wat-is-dat-eigenlijk/.
Last accessed 29.06.2018.
[15]https://www.kimcrabeels.be/wp-content/uploads/2015/03/
GVA-20161104-00026001.pdf. Last accessed 29.06.2018.

when expletive negation is accompanied by the positive polarity particle *wel*, with which it can (and readily does) occur in combination. Some attested examples are given in (22):

(22) a. Elektriciteit, hoe belangrijk is dat **wel niet**[16]
          electricity   how important is that PRT not
          'Electricity, how important is that!'
      b. Sinds mijn kindertijd – hoe lang is dat **wel niet** geleden? –
          since my   childhood   how long is that PRT not past
          hanteer ik even   vlot   het Nederlands als het West-Vlaams
          handle I equally fluently the Dutch   as the West.Flemish
          en   het castellano [...].[17]
          and the Castellano
          'Since my childhood – how long ago is that! – I've been equally fluent in Dutch, West Flemish and Castellano.'

The elements *wel* and *niet* can also occur in combination with a seemingly similar function and interpretation in other exclamative clauses (cf. (23a)), but crucially not in interrogatives with question force (cf. (23b)).

(23) a. Wat er   allemaal **wel niet** gedaan is.[18]
          what EXPL all.ADV PRT not done   is
          'How many things have been done!'
      b. *Wat is er   allemaal **wel niet** gedaan?
          what is EXPL all.ADV PRT not done

To conclude, we now have another argument in favour of the claim that – at least in Dutch – HPQs differ structurally from HDQs. Under purely pragmatic accounts of their differences in interpretation, the differing distribution and interpretation of the negator *niet* (and the positive polarity particle *wel*) in the two contexts remains unexplained.

---

[16]http://nlcm.nl/elektriciteit-hoe-belangrijk-dat-wel-niet/. Last accessed 29.06.2018.

[17]http://uilenvlucht.jotemo.be/?m=201212. Last accessed 29.06.2018.

[18]www.dutchdesignonabudget.nl/2015/06/wat-er-allemaal-al-wel-niet-gedaan-is.html. Last accessed 01.07.2018.

4 HPQs, inverted exclamatives and rhetorical questions

Cases such as the short attested exchange in (24) might at first sight appear to contradict the claim made in section 2.1 above to the effect that while HPQs can be responded to, they are incompatible with an answer that provides a piece of new information. As A's utterance in (24) contains the string *wel niet*, shown above to be incompatible with HDQs (cf. (23b)), this must be a HPQ rather than a HDQ and indeed, under the most natural interpretation of this statement, A wishes to convey the message that it has indeed been a very long time since they played this particular board game. Nevertheless, B's response appears to constitute an answer which provides a rough indication as to when they last played this game.

(24)   A: "Pim-pam-petten? Hoe lang is dat **wel niet** geleden?"[19]
              pim-pam-pet.INF   how long is that PRT not passed
              'Pim-pam-pet [a board game, rn & ld], how long ago is that'
        B: "Een jaar of dertien." zei   ik droogjes.
              a   year or thirteen said I   dryly
              'About thirteen years, I said dryly.'

We see two possible ways to account for such cases. The first is to follow Delfitto & Fiorin (2014) who claim that while exclamatives and rhetorical questions have essentially the same (Boolean) semantics (regardless of whether an expletive negator is present), the two structures are differentiated by – among other things – the fact that only the latter can be answered in a pragmatically felicitous manner (see in particular Delfitto & Fiorin 2014: 293, fn. 2). If this is indeed the case, then considering HPQs to be rhetorical questions potentially accounts for the fact that HPQs pattern with exclamatives rather than with HDQs in the ways described above, and yet nevertheless permit a contentful answer like HDQs and other questions, and unlike canonical non-inverted exclamatives.

Note however that – as shown by the constructed dialogue in (25), where A is Jespersen's example of an English exclamative structure involving expletive negation (discussed above, where it is provided as example (14)) – it is also possible for an interlocutor, B, to provide a pragmatically felicitous answer that provides new information, something which is impossible in response to the corre-

---

[19]https://mijn.editio.nl/schrijfwedstrijd/schrijverij/.   Last   accessed
01.07.2018.

sponding non-inverted exclamative in the parallel dialogue in (26).

(25)   A: How often have I (not) watched him!
        B: I don't know. 3 times maybe?

(26)   A: How often I have watched him!
        B: #I don't know. 3 times maybe?

Should the label 'rhetorical question' thus be extended to all inverted exclamatives? This seems undesirable, in the first instance as not all rhetorical questions can have exclamative interpretation, and so the affinity which HPQs and other inverted exclamatives show to non-inverted exclamatives is obfuscated under such an approach. On the contrary, canonical rhetorical questions are rather understood as 'an assertion of opposite polarity' (Sadock 1971: 224), such that (27) and (28) are interpreted as meaning roughly 'No-one still uses Facebook' and 'Everyone likes chocolate' respectively.[20]

(27)   Who still uses Facebook?

(28)   Who doesn't like chocolate?

Similar examples of canonical rhetorical questions which systematically resist exclamative interpretation can be found in Standard Dutch (where such rhetorical questions can be differentiated from questions with interrogative illocutionary force by the addition of the unstressed discourse particle *nou* (in Northern Dutch varieties), or *nu* (which is more idiomatic in Southern Dutch)). A relevant example is given in (29) (from Dik 1997: 244, his (30b) (our translation rn & ld, emphasis in original[21])), which again has opposite polarity interpretation ('No-one would want to be chairperson'):

(29)   Wie wil   er   **nou** voorzitter worden???
        who wants there PRT chairperson become
        'Who on earth would want to be CHAIRperson?'

As Nye (2009: 26 fn. 11) observes for English, the same applies to certain structures involving how, such as (30), which are interpreted as meaning 'It can't be so very difficult!' and can thus also be classified as rhetorical questions. Similarly,

---

[20] As Delfitto & Fiorin (2014: 296) observe, "Typically, negative rhetorical *wh*-questions express some sort of universal quantification."

[21] As suggested by the capitalisation, (29) is most naturally pronounced with heavier-than-neutral stress on the predicate *voorzitter* 'chairperson'.

the Dutch rhetorical question (featuring the particle *nu*) in (31) has very much the same meaning as its English counterpart in (30).

(30)   How difficult can it be?

(31)   Hoe moeilijk kan dat **nu** zijn,   cijfers   met elkaar   verbinden
        how difficult can that PRT be.INF numbers with each.other connect.INF
        tot een tekening.[22]
        to a   drawing
        'How difficult can that be, connecting numbers to make a drawing?'

As neither HPQs nor inverted exclamatives of the type illustrated in (25) are interpreted as assertions of the opposite polarity, there seems little motivation on interpretive grounds for categorising these together with core rhetorical question cases such as (27)–(31). Similarly, in the absence of any clear definition which identifies and characterises properties common to all of the many structurally and interpretively heterogeneous structures to which the term 'rhetorical question' has been applied (for various approaches, see e.g. Han 2002, Caponigro & Sprouse 2007, Sprouse 2007, Delfitto & Fiorin 2014, and references cited therein), extending the reach of this label to cover HPQs (and potentially other inverted exclamatives too) currently offers little by way of explanatory advantage.[23]

A starting point for a second – and in our view more convincing – approach to accounting for cases such as (24) and (25) is the fact that what these examples hold in common is that in both cases B wilfully misconstrues what A intends to be an inverted exclamative as a degree question. B's characterisation of their own manner of responding in (24) as *droogjes* 'dryly' is telling in this regard, and B's response in (25) comes across as equally flippant. We suggest that in (24) and (25), the interlocutor B is in effect providing an answer to the HDQs 'How long ago is that?' and 'How often have I watched him?' respectively, rather than an appropriate response to the HPQ 'How long ago is that!', in (24), and the inverted exclamative 'How often have I watched him!' in (25). Thus we can maintain the claim made in section 2.1 that HPQs, like exclamatives, do not introduce a question into the discourse and are thus incompatible with an answer that provides a new piece of information. Speakers can, however, knowingly play upon the surface similarities HPQs show to HDQs and choose to treat HPQs as HDQs, to

---

[22]https://twitter.com/jookjev/status/546651519287042048.   Last   accessed
12.07.2018.
    [23] Delfitto & Fiorin (2014: 293, fn. 2) themselves "leave the distinction between exclamatives and rhetorical questions to the reader's intuition".

(intended) comic effect.[24]

Thus, whilst recognising the properties which (certain types) of rhetorical questions seem to share with (certain types of) exclamative structures (as identified by Delfitto & Fiorin 2014), pending a clear definition of the term 'rhetorical question' and a thorough exploration of the intersection of this category with that of (inverted) exclamatives, we continue to treat HPQs as a particular subtype of inverted exclamative, on the basis of their syntactic and interpretive similarities to canonical members of the category 'exclamative', illustrated and discussed in sections 2 and 3 above.

5 For future research

Many questions remain concerning the specifics of the structure of HPQs, in particular how to encode structurally not only the syntactic and semantic differences they show to the sometimes string-identical HDQs, but also the more subtle interpretive differences they show to canonical exclamatives, to other inverted exclamatives, and to certain types of rhetorical questions. As discussed in section 4, a starting point for this would be a detailed taxonomy of the various structures labelled as 'rhetorical questions' and 'inverted exclamatives' in the literature, with particular attention paid to any potential intersection between these two categories.[25]

It also remains to be determined what the precise function and interpretation of (*wel*) *niet* is in Dutch HPQs, in comparison to those Dutch HPQs in which expletive negation is not present. A broader question in relation to expletive negation concerns the range of structural environments in which this is licensed. It is currently unclear why expletive negation in Dutch is permitted in HPQs as well as other canonical exclamatives, while in English it is excluded from HPQs and the majority of other exclamative structures, but permitted in some other con-

---

[24] In the case of (24), this relies on the respondent overlooking the presence of *wel niet*, which, as discussed in section 3, disambiguates HPQs from HDQs. Even though the surface string of (25) is identical to that of the corresponding interrogative *How often have I watched him?*, the two structures are differentiated in speech by prosody, which the respondent must again disregard. In this respect, (25) is reminiscent of exchanges in which requests such as *Can you pass the salt?* are met with the response *Yes, I can.* rather than with the action required to fulfil the request. In such instances, the respondent similarly has to – wilfully or otherwise – ignore the difference in prosody between the request and the information-seeking question.

[25] The proliferation of labels is greater still, with Andueza & Gutiérrez-Rexach (2010) making use of the term 'rhetorical exclamatives' for the Spanish structures they discuss.

texts, including at least marginally in exclamatives such as (14) (repeated above as (25A)).[26]

At least in Dutch, it does seem to be the case that expletive negation in exclamatives is parasitic on the presence of one crucial ingredient, namely *wh*-movement to the clausal left periphery. In *wh*-exclamatives lacking *wh*-movement, expletive negation is totally unacceptable. One such type of exclamative is found in the native variety of Dutch of one of the authors of this squib, which is a variety of East Flemish from the region of Ghent. The relevant structure features an invariable (and typically phonologically reduced) *wh*-word *wa(t)* 'what, which is not located in the left periphery of the clause, but rather sits in the TP. Consider the examples in (32):

(32)   a.   Gent is **wa**   de max![27]
            Ghent is WHAT the max
            'Ghent is SO cool!'
       b.   Oostende is **wa**   de max![28]
            Ostend   is WHAT the max
            'Ostend is SO cool!'
       c.   dat is **wa**   schoon![29]
            that is WHAT beautiful
            'That's SO beautiful!'
       d.   Wajoooooo da   is **wa**   lang geleden![30]
            EXCLAM   that is WHAT long passed
            'Woah, that's SUCH a long time ago!'

---

[26] The structure illustrated in (i) (see Huddleston & Pullum 2002: 845–846 is another context where expletive negation is possible in English. Both interpretations (a) and (b) are available for the string in (i): reading (a) results from interpreting *(did)n't* as having negative force, while reading (b) results when *(did)n't* is interpreted as expletive negation.

(i)   I wouldn't be surprised if they didn't get the job.

          a.   I would not find it surprising if they did not get the job.
          b.   I would not find it surprising if they did get the job.

Crucially, although the negator *nie(t)* can be added to these structures, it always has to be interpreted as inducing canonical sentential negation:

(33)   a.   Gent   is **wa**   nie de max!
              Ghent is WHAT not the max
              'Ghent is SO not cool!'

        b.   Oostende is **wa**   nie de max!
              Ostend   is WHAT not the max
              'Ostend is SO not cool!'

        c.   dat   is **wa**   nie schoon!
              that is WHAT not beautiful
              'That's SO not beautiful!'

        d.   Wajoooooo da   is **wa**   nie lang geleden!
              EXCLAM   that is WHAT lnot ong passed
              'Woah, that's SO not a long time ago!'

To conclude this section, while *wh*-movement may be a necessary condition for the licensing of expletive negation, the presence of *wh*-movement alone cannot be a sufficient condition for this, given that canonical interrogatives – both in Standard Dutch and in the colloquial variety from Ghent in which structures like (32) are productive – also involve *wh*-movement and yet fail to allow expletive negation, as example (23) above shows.

Providing an answer to the questions raised in this section goes well beyond the scope of our contribution here, which hopes to serve as the impetus for further research in these areas.

6   Conclusion

In the course of this paper, we have not only demonstrated that Dutch HPQs pattern alike with exclamatives rather than HDQs on the tests proposed by Nye

---

[27]`https://twitter.com/genteswademax`. Last accessed 09.07.2018.

[28]`https://www.visitoostende.be/nl/oostende-wa-de-max`.   Last   accessed 01.07.2018.

[29]`https://www.facebook.com/JPBauwens/posts/1052229218190696?comment_id=1052428764837408&comment_tracking=%7B%22tn%22%3A%22R%22%7D`.   Last accessed 01.07.2018.

[30]`mc.sk5.dev.sk-gaming.com/member/579687-kersjeee/guestbook`.   Last accessed 01.07.2018.

(2009) for English but, more significantly, have shown that the Dutch data reveals an additional similarity between HPQs and exclamatives to the exclusion of HDQs, namely the ability for expletive negation to occur in the former two structures, but not the latter. This provides additional support for an analysis whereby HPQs differ structurally from HDQs, as opposed to the alternative in which the interpretation of a single interrogative structure is determined by pragmatic context. *Hoe cool is dat wel niet!*

References

Andueza, P. & Gutiérrez-Rexach, J. 2010. Negation and the interpretation of Spanish rhetorical exclamatives. In C. Borgonovo, M. Español Echevarría & P. Prévost (eds.), *Selected proceedings of the 12th Hispanic Linguistics Symposium*. 17–25. Somerville, MA: Cascadilla Press.

Biberauer, T. & Potgieter, J.M. 2017. Negative exclamatives in Afrikaans: Some initial thoughts. *Stellenbosch Papers in Linguistics* 48. 17–33.

Caponigro, I. & Sprouse, J. 2007. Rhetorical questions as questions. *Sinn und Bedeutung* 11. 121–133.

Collins, C. & Postal, P. 2014. *Classical NEG raising: An essay on the syntax of negation*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Delfitto, D. & Fiorin, G. 2014. Negation in exclamatives. *Studia Linguistica* 68. 284–327.

Dik, S. 1997. *The theory of functional grammar, part 2: Complex and derived constructions (ed. by Kees Hengeveld)*. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Dinković, I.Z. & Ilc, G. 2017. Pleonastic negation from a cross-linguistic perspective. *Jezikoslovlje* 18. 159–180.

Espinal, M.T. 2000. Expletive negation, negative concord and feature checking. *Catalan Working Papers in Linguistics* 8. 47–69.

Haegeman, L. 1995. *The syntax of negation*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Han, C.h. 2002. Interpreting interrogatives as rhetorical questions. *Lingua* 112. 201–229.

Horn, L. 2010. Multiple negation in English and other languages. In L. Horn (ed.), *The expression of negation*. 111–148. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Huddleston, R. & Pullum, G. 2002. *The Cambridge grammar of the English language*. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.

Jespersen, O. 1924. *The philosophy of grammar*. London: Allen & Unwin.

Nye, R. 2009. *How pseudo-questions and the interpretation of wh-clauses in English*: University of Essex MA thesis. `http://www.gist.ugent.be/file/236`. (Last accessed 09.07.2018).

Nye, R. 2011. Competing analyses for 'how' pseudo questions in English. *Newcastle Working Papers in Linguistics* 17. 131–153.

Portner, P. & Zanuttini, R. 2000. The force of negation in wh exclamatives and interrogatives. In L. Horn & Y. Kato (eds.), *Negation and polarity*. 193–231. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Rett, J. 2011. Exclamatives, degrees, and speech acts. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 34. 411–442.

Rett, J. 2015. *The semantics of evaluativity*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Sadock, J. 1971. Queclaratives. In A. Douglas, M.A. Campbell, V. Cohen, J. Lovins, E. Maxwell, C. Nygren & J. Reighard (eds.), *Papers from the seventh regional meeting of the Chicago Linguistic Society*. 223–232. Chicago, IL: Chicago Linguistic Society.

Sprouse, J. 2007. Rhetorical question and wh-movement. *Linguistic Inquiry* 38. 572–580.

Polarity and other distributional properties of *uitkijken/opletten/oppassen* ('look out')

Albert Oosterhof

1   Introduction

This short article presents and discusses some results of a corpus investigation into the use and distribution of the verbs *uitkijken*, *opletten* and *oppassen* ('watch out, look out, take care'). The study focuses on some aspects of the distribution of these verbs which are relevant to the study of negative polarity items. I will show that the verbs under consideration can be described as negative polarity items which are licensed or triggered by conditions that are applied cumulatively.[1]

Hoeksema (1999) argues that for some negative polarity items, the conditions which "license" or "trigger" polarity items are applied cumulatively. He discusses the properties of the verb *wijsmaken* ('deceive') and argues that this verb shows a special type of sensitivity to negation. Hoeksema makes a distinction between two uses of this verb *wijsmaken*. First, there is a so-called neutral use, as illustrated in (1). In this use, the verb refers to a situation in which someone really deceives someone into thinking something. We can add a negative adverb to such sentences, as is illustrated in (1b) and the two sentences in (1) are both acceptable.

(1)   a.   We hebben hem <u>wijsgemaakt</u> dat het feest is uitgesteld.
               ' We have deceived him into thinking that the party has been postponed.'

---

    b.   We hebben hem (toch maar) niet <u>wijsgemaakt</u> dat het feest is uit-
gesteld.
'We have not deceived him into thinking that the party has been post-
poned.'

Secondly, the verb can be used in counterfactual environments as illustrated in (2). The relevant reading is available in sentences containing a negative element, like (2b). Hoeksema (1999) observes that this counterfactual use does not seem to be available if the adverb of negation is absent, as in (2a).

(2)   a.   #Je <u>maakt</u> mij <u>wijs</u> dat het feest is uitgesteld.
(Suppose someone tried to deceive me into thinking that the party has been postponed, then I would believe it. ≈ 'I do believe that the party is postponed.')
    b.   Je <u>maakt</u> mij niet <u>wijs</u> dat het feest is uitgesteld.
(Suppose someone tried to deceive me into thinking that the party has been postponed, then I would not believe it. ≈ 'I do not believe that the party is postponed.')

Hoeksema (1999) concludes from such observations that *wijsmaken* can be described as a negative polarity item with triggering conditions that can be applied cumulatively. This item is not a "standard polarity item", but in a certain environment, in this case in counterfactual contexts, it requires the presence of negation.

    My corpus research presented here focuses on the distribution of the verbs *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* and on similarities with the distribution of *wijsmaken*. The sentences presented in (3) are corpus examples taken from the Spoken Dutch Corpus, a corpus of some ten million words with spoken Dutch material.

(3)   a.   en als je dan niet <u>uitkijkt</u> dan uh dan gaat 't één ten koste van 't ander. (CGN)
'if you do not look out, then one thing is at the expense of another thing.'
    b.   nou je kan er ruzie om krijgen als je niet <u>oppast</u>. (CGN)
'in fact there will be a row if you do not look out.'
    c.   en dan uh uh mmm dan wordt 't uh al gauw een puinhoop als je niet <u>oplet</u>. (CGN)
'it all becomes a mess quickly if you do not look out.'

In these sentences, the verbs under consideration are used in a conditional clause and accompanied by an adverb of negation. Intuitively, such conditional sentences with verbs like *uitkijken* are less natural without the adverb of negation. The pattern in (4a), in which an adverb of negation is used, is a more natural type of conditional sentence than (4b).

(4)   <u>Intuition:</u>
         a.   Als je <u>niet</u> uitkijkt/oppast/oplet, dan X
                'If you do not look out, then X' (= a very 'natural' type of sentence)
         b.   Als je uitkijkt/oppast/oplet, dan X
                'If you look out, then X' (= a less 'natural' type of sentence)

I do not claim that there is a strict difference in grammaticality or acceptability between the patterns in (4). I will carry out a corpus investigation to verify the introspection-based pattern in (4). This method is in line with current research into negative polarity items, in which claims about the polarity sensitivity of items are based on such corpus data.

2   Corpus

Table 1 presents an overview of corpus material used in my corpus study. The material consists of various types of texts, spoken as well as written material; formal as well as informal texts and Flemish as well as Dutch texts. The relevant information can be found in the table.

3   Results

The results of the corpus study are presented in Table 2. Only occurrences where the verb has the desired meaning are taken into account. For example, *uitkijken* has an alternative meaning under which the verb can be translated in English as 'look forward to'. We are only interested in cases where the verbs under consideration can be translated as 'watch out', 'look out' or a similar expression.

    The three verbs under consideration have a relatively similar distribution. For each verb the occurrences in modal contexts and imperatives correspond to two thirds or more of the total number of sentences.

    Each verb occurs in combination with a 'nonveridical' (cf. Zwarts 1995) trigger in more than 90% of the total number of cases. In the literature, such items

Corpus	Number of Words	Period	Material
INL 27 million and 38 million words corpora (1995-1996)	65 million	1970-1995	material from Dutch and Flemish newspapers, books, speeches, articles, journalistic and legal texts
CGN (2004)	10 million	1998-2004	Dutch and Flemish spoken material: dialogues, other conversations, interviews, lessons, speeches, news bulletins, live coverages and (other) spoken texts
CONDIV-corpus	4.8 million	1998	material from Dutch newspapers
Mediargus (online digital archive of articles from Flemish newspapers and magazines)	relevant number of words cannot be determined	1990-2008	material from Flemish newspapers and magazines

Table 1: Overview of the corpus material

which show a (strong) tendency to occur in nonveridical environments are re-ferred to semi-NPI's or weak NPI's (see Hoeksema 1994, van der Wal 1996, Oost-erhof 2003-4). On the basis of our results, we could draw the conclusion that *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* are polarity sensitive items on the basis of their general distribution. The question is of course whether this is the desired result, but I will return to this question in the discussion section.

   Now that we have discussed the general distribution of the three verbs, we will now consider some more detailed results with regard to conditional sen-tences. Table 3 shows a comparison between the use of the verbs in conditional sentences and other contexts. The table provides for each case the number of occurrences in combination with an adverb of negation *niet* and the number of occurrences without such an adverb of negation.

environments/triggers			uitkijken	oppassen	opletten
			='look/watch out, take care'		
modal contexts	modal auxiliary	moeten ('must, have to')	137	213	133
		mogen ('may, be allowed to')	3	10	3
		kunnen ('can')			1
		zullen ('shall')	1		1
	other		17	28	24
imperatives			55	94	117
negative contexts	niet ('not')		13		36
	niet goed ('not well')		4		18
	other		1	1	2
conditional sentences	with negation	als...niet...('if...not...')	22	24	12
		als...niet goed ('if...not well...')			2
		wanneer + niet ('when + not')			1
	without negation	als...('if...')	1	1	6
		mits...('only if...')			1
inherently negative	zonder ('without')		8	1	
	alleen ('only')		1		
future			3		11
questions			1	2	2
combination of two 'nonveridical' triggers			3	2	6
other 'nonveridical' triggers			4	7	9
without any trigger			14	1	34
TOTAL			**281**	**384**	**419**

Table 2: Distribution of the three verbs

	uitkijken		oppassen		opletten	
	conditional sentences	other contexts	conditional sentences	other contexts	conditional sentences	other contexts
with neg. *(niet)*	39 **91%**	18 **7%**	102 **96%**	1 **0%**	98 **80%**	56 14%
without neg. *(niet)*	4 **9%**	247 **93%**	4 **4%**	358 **100%**	24 **20%**	339 **86%**
TOTAL	43	265	106	359	122	395

Table 3: The occurrence of *niet* in the protasis of conditional sentences and other contexts

There is a significant difference between the use of these three verbs in conditional sentences and other contexts. In conditional sentences, by far most occurrences of the verbs are accompanied by the adverb of negation. In other con-

texts, most sentences in which one of the verbs is used do not contain an adverb of negation

4 Discussion

More than 90% of the occurrences of the verbs *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* can be identified as occurrences in nonveridical contexts, which implies that these verbs can be described as weak negative polarity items. However, this conclusion is in a sense counterintuitive: there is only a small proportion of the total number of occurrences in which an adverb of negation is used (cf. Table 2). The nonveridicality hypothesis leads to a situation where an item can be identified as a (weak) negative polarity item, even though the percentage of occurrences with negation is low. If we accept the nonveridicality hypothesis, the relation between the set of items identified by using the relevant criterion and the concept of polarity sensitivity is lost. The criterion of nonveridicality provides us with a very broad definition, as a consequence of which even items not especially sensitive to polarity end up as polarity sensitive items.

In earlier work on negative polarity items other logical properties were used in order to describe the distribution of negative polarity items. In publications from the eighties and the nineties by people like Ladusaw, Zwarts, Hoeksema and van der Wouden the assumption was made that negative polarity items are sensitive to downward entailment and related properties. Modal contexts and imperatives do not have the property of downward entailment. Under such a hypothesis, *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* would not be labelled as negative polarity items, which seems to be a more desired result.

Let us now consider the relation between the use of *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* in conditional sentences and the presence of an adverb of negation. We have observed that there is a clear tendency that in most cases such conditional sentences contain an adverb of negation. These verbs are polarity sensitive when used in conditional sentences. This leads to a confusing situation. The claim that the verbs *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* are negative polarity items in conditional sentences suggests that they must be used with an appropriate trigger. However, the protasis of a conditional sentence is assumed to be an appropriate trigger for negative polarity items itself. This implies that the claim that *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* are negative polarity items in conditional sentences is tautologically true (i.e. it cannot be falsified).

This illustrates that there is a complex relation between the sensitivity of so-

called polarity items and their licensing environments. This point can be further demonstrated by referring to another item, *iemand gegeven zijn* ('be granted to someone'). This item is included by Hoeksema (2013) in his lexicon of polarity items. Hoeksema (2013: 42) writes that this item is fairly common in conditional sentences (5% of total number of attestations). We can conclude that the protasis of a conditional sentence is an example of an environment which plays a different role with regard to different polarity items. It is part of the set of licensing conditions of an item like i*emand gegeven zijn* ('be granted to someone'), but for *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten*, it is part of the definition of the relevant item.

As a conclusion, note that we can describe the restrictions on the verbs *uitkijken*, *oppassen* and *opletten* as a special kind of collocational behaviour. A collocation can be defined as an idiosyncratic restriction on the compatibility of lexical items. In our data, there seems to be collocational behaviour as well, but in this case there is an idiosyncratic restriction on the compatibility of environments in which items occur. The three verbs under consideration in our study provide an example of the fact that description of concrete behaviour of lexical items is a more complicated task than expected from the perspective of straightforward logical notions like nonveridicality.

References

Hoeksema, J. 1994. On the grammaticalization of negative polarity items. In S. Gahl, A. Dolbey & C. Johnson (eds.), *Proceedings of the 20th annual meeting of the Berkeley Linguistics Society: General session dedicated to the contributions of Charles J. Fillmore*. 273–282. Berkeley, CA: Berkeley Linguistics Society.

Hoeksema, J. 1999. *Iemand iets wijsmaken*: irrealis en negatieve polariteit. *TABU* 29(1). 37–42.

Hoeksema, J. 2013. De negatief-polaire uitdrukkingen van het Nederlands. Unpublished manuscript, University of Groningen.

Oosterhof, A. 2003-4. Polariteitsgevoeligheid van doorgaan ('gehouden worden'). *TABU* 33(1/2). 131–150.

Oosterhof, A. & Hoeksema, J. 2008. *Uitkijken*, *oppassen* en *opletten*: Een corpusonderzoek naar polaire gevoeligheid en andere distributionele eigenschappen. *TABU* 37(1/2). 79–110.

van der Wal, S. 1996. *Negative polarity items and negation: Tandem acquisition*: University of Groningen dissertation.

van der Wouden, T. 1997. *Negative contexts. Collocation, polarity, and multiple negation*. London: Routledge.

Zwarts, F. 1995. Nonveridical contexts. *Linguistic Analysis* 25(3/4). 286–312.

The absence of classifiers in numeral classifier constructions in Vietnamese

Trang Phan[*]

To Liliane, who inspires me to always look beyond assumptions

Vietnamese is a so-called obligatory numeral classifier language. Nevertheless it is possible to have direct combination between a numeral and a bare noun in the absence of a go-between classifier. The goal of this squib is to investigate the seemingly unusual cases of such Numeral-N phrases.

In Gil's (2008) typology of numeral classifiers, the world's languages are divided into three types on the basis of whether classifiers are absent, optional or obligatory in numeral constructions. Vietnamese is considered as belonging to the third type in which a numeral cannot quantify a noun without the presence of a classifier based on examples like (1):

(1)   hai   *(con) chó
        two   CLF dog
        'two dogs'   (Gil's example 2008: 4)

Gil notes, though, that in Vietnamese there is a specialised style of speech, namely food ordering at food stalls and restaurants, in which numeral classifiers are frequently omitted, as seen in (2).

(2)   Context: At the noodle bar where there is a choice between two kinds of
        noodle soup (chicken or beef), a group of 5 customers might simply order
        as follows:

        Ba   gà   hai bò
        Three chicken two beef
        'Three bowls of chicken soup and two bowls of beef soup.'

Gil excludes those specific contexts and still classifies Vietnamese as an obligatory numeral classifier language (Gil 2008: 5).

    In this squib, I take issue with Gil's classification by showing that the optionality of Vietnamese classifiers in numeral constructions is not limited to those special contexts, rather the optionality of classifiers in Vietnamese numeral constructions can be understood in a systematic and productive way. More precisely, there is in fact a large group of Vietnamese nouns which do not need a classifier in combination with a numeral.[1]

    In the literature on Vietnamese, it has been proposed that Vietnamese nouns can be divided into two main types: classified nouns that require a classifier to be quantified (as in (1)), and non-classified nouns that can be counted directly in the absence of classifiers (Emeneau 1951, Thompson 1965, Nguyễn 1975, Nguyễn 2002, Tran 2011, a.o.), as illustrated by the Numeral-N phrases in (3).

(3)   a.   Hai ngày/ tỉnh/   bàn/ túi/ bạn/ sinh-viên/vận-động-viên
            two day/   province/ table/ bag/ friend/ student/athlete
            'two days/provinces/tables/bags/friends/students/athletes.'
    b.   Một-trăm   ngày/ tỉnh/   bàn/ túi/ bạn/
            one-hundred day/   province/ table/ bag/ friend/
            sinh-viên/vận-động-viên
            student/athlete
            'one-hundred days/provinces/tables/bags/friends/students/athletes.'

This phenomenon is not novel cross-linguistically. The same Numeral-N pattern is found in Korean (Hwang 2012) but with two restrictions:[2] Numeral-N is only possible if the NP (i) refers to common human nouns and (ii) is combined with numerals below five, as seen in (4).

(4)   a.   *tases kapang
           five   bag

---

[1] See Gil (2008), Aikhenvald (2000) and Greenberg (1974) for similar phenomena cross-linguistically.

[2] Her et al. (2015) also observes that Numeral-N phrases can be licensed in Chinese in limited contexts, in an idiom for instance:

(i)   wu ma   huan liu yang
        5   horse trade 6 goat
        'Trading 5 horses for 6 goats.'

     'five bags'
  b. *ney wuntongsenswu
    four athlete
    'four athletes'
  c. *payk   haksayng
    one-hundred student
    'one hundred students'   (Hwang's examples: 2012: 65–66)

Unlike in Korean, Numeral-N phrases in Vietnamese are productive regardless of the noun type and the numeral type, as shown in (3), which clearly suggests that, contra Gil's classification, Vietnamese seems to better fit with optional numeral classifier languages.

 In fact, a Numeral-N phrase can appear as the object or the subject of sentences, and can be interpreted as indefinite or definite in Vietnamese:

(5) Tôi vừa viết thư giới-thiệu cho **hai sinh-viên**. **Hai sinh-viên** đều
  1SG just write letter recommend give two student. Two student both
  học ngôn-ngữ-học.
  study linguistics
  'I have just written recommendation letters for two students. The two students both study linguistics.'

That is to say, a Numeral-N phrase can have the same distribution and interpretation as a fully-fledged Numeral-CLF-N phrase:

(6) Tôi vừa viết thư giới-thiệu cho **hai bạn sinh-viên**. **Hai bạn**
  1SG just write letter recommend give two CLF student. Two CLF
  sinh-viên đều học ngôn-ngữ-học.
  student both study linguistics
  'I have just written recommendation letters for two students. The two students both study linguistics.'

This seems to suggest that a Numeral-N is indeed a Numeral-CLF-N underlyingly. The question is where the covert CLF component resides: in the Numeral or in the N?

 One account is proposed by Nguyễn (2002) in which the numeral in Numeral-N phrases is considered as a 'zero classifier' (in his terminology) carrying the individuating function.[3] Consider Nguyễn's minimal pair in (7):

---

  [3] In order to account for the optionality of the classifier in numeral constructions, Borer (2005:

(7) a. Người đã lên mặt-trăng.
         Person ANT up moon
         'Human beings went to the moon.'
     b. Hai người đã lên mặt-trăng
         two person ANT up moon
         'Two people went to the moon.'   (Nguyễn's examples: 2002: 17)

In the absence of the numeral, the bare noun in (7a) is interpreted as generic, whereas the addition of the numeral *hai* 'two' in (7b) forces a specific reading. Putting it differently, the absence of a classifier in Numeral-N phrases, according to Nguyễn (2002), results from the fact that the numeral serves two functions at the same time: to individuate and to count.

A scrutiny of the Vietnamese data, however, reveals that this analysis cannot be true since apart from numerals, the bare noun can also co-occur with a number of other elements in the absence of classifiers: it can immediately follow a quantifier (8a) or a plural marker (8b), and can directly precede a demonstrative (8c) or a relative clause (8d).

(8) a. Mọi *sinh-viên*
         Every student
         'Every student'
     b. Các/những *sinh-viên*
         PL   student
         'The students.'
     c. *Sinh-viên* này
         Student   this
         'This student.'
     d. *Sinh-viên* mà tôi vừa viết thư giới-thiệu
         student   RC 1SG just write letter recommend
         'The student that I have just written a recommendation letter for.'

That is to say, the absence of the classifier in the Vietnamese Numeral-N construction is derived from the fact that the bare noun is underlyingly a CLF-N phrase (along the lines of Cheng & Sybesma's 1999 proposal for Chinese). That is, rather than assuming that numerals, quantifiers, plural markers, demonstratives and the RC marker all individually combine with a zero classifier, we can take the much simpler approach that it is just the noun that combines with the

───────────────

117–118) also suggests that in such languages, numerals can function as dividers.

individuating classifier.

This account is further supported by the fact that the bare noun indeed can function as either the object or the subject of the sentence, and can obtain either indefinite (underlying bare N) or definite (underlying CLF-N) readings, as in (9):

(9) Tôi mời cả **sinh-viên** và giáo-viên đến dự   tiệc. **Sinh-viên** thì
     1SG invite all student and teacher come attend party Student   TOP
     say   bí-tỉ, giáo-viên thì còn tỉnh-táo.
     drunk DEG teacher   TOP still awake
     'I invited both students and teachers to come to the party. The students
     were very drunk, the teachers were still awake.'

To conclude, in this squib, I have contested Gil's 2008 classification of Vietnamese as an obligatory numeral classifier language based on a wider range of empirical patterns in which the overt classifier is absent. I further put forward the idea that the absence of the classifier in Numeral-N constructions is indicative of the fact that the bare noun is not so bare in Vietnamese.

References

Aikhenvald, A.Y. 2000. *Classifiers: A typology of noun categorization devices*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Borer, H. 2005. *Structuring sense. vol.1, in name only*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Cheng, L. & Sybesma, R. 1999. Bare and not-so-bare nouns and the structure of NP. *Linguistic Inquiry* 30. 509–542.

Emeneau, M. 1951. *Studies in Vietnamese (Annamese) grammar*. Berkeley, CA: University of California Publications.

Gil, D. 2008. Numeral classifiers. In M.S. Dryer, D. Gil & B. Comrie (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. `http://wals.info/feature/55`.

Greenberg, J. 1974. Studies in numerical systems I: Double numeral systems. *Stanford Working Papers on Language Universals* 1. 75–89.

Her, O.S., Ching-Perng, C. & Hui-Chin, T. 2015. Justifying silent elements in syntax: The case of a silent numeral, a silent classifier, and two silent nouns in Mandarin Chinese. *International Journal of Chinese Linguistics* 2. 193–216.

Hwang, S.H. 2012. *The acquisition of Korean plural marking by native English speakers*: Georgetown University dissertation.

Nguyễn, P.P. 2002. *Những vấn đề ngữ pháp tiếng việt: loại từ và chỉ thị từ [Issues of Vietnamese grammar: Classifiers and demonstratives]*. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất bản Đại học Quốc gia Hà Nội.

Nguyễn, T.C. 1975. *Từ loại danh từ trong tiếng việt hiện đại [The word class of nouns in modern Vietnamese]*. Hà Nội: Nhà Xuất bản Khoa học xã hội.

Thompson, L. 1965. *A Vietnamese grammar* Mon-Khmer Studies XIII-XIV. Honolulu, HI: University of Hawaii Press.

Tran, J. 2011. *The acquisition of Vietnamese classifiers*: University of Hawaii at Manoa dissertation.

Embedded interrogatives as free relatives

Cecilia Poletto and Emanuela Sanfelici

1   Introduction

In this work we intend to show that a typical property of North-Eastern Italian dialects (NEIDs) namely the sequence wh-complementizer in embedded interrogatives (which in some dialects also extends to non-standard (under the definition by Obenauer 2006) and even standard main questions originally developed out of a free relative structure where the complementizer is actually not a complementizer but part of the internal structure of the wh-item heading the relative clause. The structures we are going to investigate are illustrated in (1), where we see that the wh-item is followed by the item *che*, which has always been interpreted as a complementizer.

(1)   No so   cossa che el gabia dito.
        Not know what that he has   said
        'I do not know what he said.'

If we consider this phenomenon in traditional terms, it looks like an apparent violation of the traditional "doubly filled comp filter", since the C° head is occupied by the complementizer and specifier of the CP by the wh-item. Even under a more restricted view, namely that the doubly filled comp filter can only be violated if the head and the specifier agree (see Koopman 1996), there is no morphological hint of an agree operation between the wh and *che* that might justify the violation. This structure is problematic even in a more modern framework: for instance the exceptionality of these structures has been noted (see Poletto & Vanelli 1995 and Poletto 2000) within the cartographic framework as cases in which the complementizer does not sit in its usual Force° position as it does in declaratives (see Rizzi 1997), but as a case of a low complementizer probably located in the low Fin/Focus area. Even assuming that the complementizer is first merged in the Fin°, since it has [+finiteness] features and then

raises to Force°, we have a case in which the complementizer does not reach the Force° position. Alternatively, we have to assume that the Force° of interrogatives is lower than the Force° of declaratives, which conceptually empties the notion of Force° as marking sentence type. Furthermore, the possibility to have at the same time high and low complementizers occurring after left dislocated items and wh-items has been identified as a weakness of the cartographic approach (see van **?**), where ideally every element should have its own position. Furthermore, *che* is usually the complementizer of declarative clauses, while interrogative clauses (at least yes/no interrogatives use *se* 'if'). Here we intend to explore an alternative which only recently became available since Poletto & Sanfelici (2015) have argued that the "complementizer" *che* found in relative clauses in Italian is actually a determiner-like portion of the internal head of the relative clause. We will argue that the first instances of wh-*che* structures in embedded interrogatives are actually free (or light headed) relative clauses, so that the element *che* found in these cases is not a complementizer at all, but is part of the internal structure of the wh-item. In order to show how this might work, we will take various NEIDs into consideration.

2   Venetian

In Venetian, and in the majority of Veneto dialects, the sequence [wh-*che*] is obligatory with all wh-items in embedded interrogatives with no exception. The lack of *che* results into ungrammaticality. We provide here some examples to illustrate the point. These structures are so stable that they can occasionally leek into the regional standard Italian of native Veneto speakers:

(2)   No so   dove   *(che) el sia 'nda.
      Not know where   that he is   gone

(3)   No so   chi *(che) le   gabia visto.
      Not know who   that them have seen

(4)   No so   come *(che) el lo gabia fato.
      Not know how   that he it have done

(5)   No so   parcossa *(che) el sia ndá   via.
      Not know why   that he be gone away

(6)   No so   quanti   pomi *(che) el gabia comprá.
      Not know how many apples   that he have bought

(7)   No so   che   zente *(che) el gabia visto.
      Not know which people   that he have seen

Interestingly, Old Venetian does not possess this property in the same way the modern variant does. The following examples are all extracted out of the Tristano Veneto, a medieval text dating around the end of the XIII or the beginning of the XIV century. They show that in Old Venetian it is indeed possible not to have *che* after then wh-item in embedded interrogatives:

(8)   çerchando **qui   novelle** li   savesse dir del   chavalier che
      looking for which news   them could   say of.the knight   that
      persegiva la   Bestia Gladisschante
      chases   the Bestia Gladisschante   (370, 32)

(9)   domandé **in que   logo** die   eser questa bataia.
      asked   in which place should be this   battle   (69, 45)

(10) Ma atanto   me   dixé **in qual parte** se va li   cavalieri.
      But in.as.much to.me said in which PART CL go the knights (145, 23)

(11) et se algun me   domandasse **de qui**   era la nave
      and if some to.me ask   of whom was the ship   (168, 8)

This is generally true of complex wh-phrases but also of bare wh-items:

(12) Lo re   domandà Tristan **qui** era lo chavalier che chavalchava
      The king asked   Tristan who was the knight   that was riding
      sì solo
      alone   (89, 47)

(13) Et ello li   domandá **donde** elli era
      And he to.them asked   where he was   (165, 13)

(14) io non so   **qui** elli sia questi tre   cavallieri de   que   le letre
      I not know who they are these three knights   about whom the letter
      parla
      talks   (22, 14)

Notably, the element meaning *where*, besides the form in (13), also has a different structure, which looks like a free relative clause with a light head, like the pronoun 'there' *lá*. The same is true of the item 'why', which displays the structure of a relative with the light noun 'reason' *chasion*:

(15)　e　domandava **lá**　**o'**　ch'elo sia lo re
　　　　and asked　　　there where that he was the king　　　　(42, 3)

(16)　ela a lor　domandà **la chasion perché** eli　gera vignudi
　　　　She to them asks　　　the reason　why　they were come　(407)

The same can also occur with the wh-item *qui*, 'who', which has no pronoun or light noun, but can (though it need not, cf. (12)) be followed by *que*:

(17)　voleva saver　**qui qu**'ello era
　　　　wanted to know who that he was

Notice that these cases have to be analyzed as embedded interrogatives, since they are selected by the verb *domandar* 'ask' and *saver* 'to know'. However, the case in (18) shows that the light head represented by the deictic pronoun *lá* is not necessary to have the structure *o-que*. This pattern resembles that exhibited by free vs. light-headed relative clauses: a free relative clause can have a null head as in (18) or a light-headed one as in (15) (Poletto & Sanfelici 2015, 2018).

(18)　ma molto elo se maravegiava **o'**　**qu**'ella　podeva eser andada
　　　　but much he CL was amazed　where that she could　have gone
　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　　(368, 28)

　　The phenomenon wh-*che* in Old Venetian is thus found primarily with 'where', 'who', 'what' and 'why', and in this last case only with a light headed relative clause, while the other wh items can also have a free relative tout court. The sequence is not found with 'how', and 'from where' or with complex wh phrases in the Tristano Veneto. We can conclude that Old Venetian displays the first stage of the phenomenon which then extends to all wh-items, i.e. embedded interrogatives actually display the structure of a free relative clause with a light head noun and the following *che*.

3　Trentino

One further dialectal area that presents this phenomenon, although in a more limited way, is Trentino: here not all wh-items have to be followed by *che*, but only some of them. Garzonio (2007) already notices this fact on the basis of the survey of the ASIt database:

(19) a. Voi saver ndo che i è   nadi i to amizi.
          want know where that CL were gone the your friends   [Trento]
      b. No so   cosa la mama l abia comprà per zena.
          Not know what the mother cl has bought for dinner
      c. Di-me ci   che as vist ieri.
          tell-me who that you have seen yesterday   [Val di Non]
      d. Di-me cando torna   el Giani.
          Tell-me when comes back the Gianni

The realization of *che* is indeed variable, since the same speaker translates sentences with and without *che* for the same wh-item in the prompt.

   The same observation is proved by a further investigation based on her own field work by Polonia (2014) for the Trentino dialects spoken in Val di Sole, Val di Cembra and Val di Non. She notices that the occurrence of wh-*che* is not obligatory with various wh items, but there is a clear tendency to use *che* with the following wh-items:

(20) Dime kel **che** le te   a   dit le to   sorele.
      Tell-me that that CL to.you have said your sisters   [Tassullo]

(21) No so   chi **che** lava   giò i piatti.
      Not know who that washes down the dishes   [Stedron, Segonzano]

Notice that the structure with the wh-item corresponding to 'what' in (20) is the same used in French embedded interrogatives where there is no wh-items but a light headed relative clause whose head is still clearly the distal demonstrative (*ce que*). Polonia (2014) provides a hierarchy of wh-items which can more frequently be doubled by *che*, although she also notes that the same speaker varies in using *che* after the very same wh-item or not. A simplified summary of the implicational scales she reports for the three valleys she investigates is reported here:

(22) What/where who how many   which   when   which X   how
      many X   why/how

The data from Old Venetian and those from Trentino only partially overlap. We can recognize some tendencies, since in all the varieties the elements which display the doubling are where, who, what but Old Venetian also tolerates why (with the light noun chasion) while complex wh-phrases are clearly at the right edge of the spectrum and the element corresponding to 'how' is also generally

218

not doubled.

4   Preliminary notes for a syntactic analysis

Poletto & Vanelli (1995) propose the following generalization:

(23)   If a dialect displays wh-*che* in main interrogatives it does also in embed-
        ded interrogatives.

Here we propose that this generalization can also be read in terms of diachronic development, such that wh-*che* starts out in embedded interrogatives and then expands into main interrogatives. Poletto & Vanelli single out the last step of the development of this structure, namely the point when it extends from embedded to main interrogatives, which we will not deal with here (see Poletto 2000 for an analysis in cartographic terms). At this point two questions arise: (i) how do these structures start out in embedded interrogatives?; (ii) When we take into consideration the data presented in the previous section where we showed that the presence of the wh-che in embedded interrogatives depends on the type of wh items introducing them, how can the generalization in (23) be implemented.

Addressing the first question, we propose that the trigger for the rise of wh-*che* is the semantic ambiguity which can arise between free and interrogative clauses under certain predicates (see Caponigro 2003). Parry (2003) shows that in Old Piedmontese the first attested cases of wh-*che* are precisely ambiguous between a free relative and an interrogative reading. One might thus simply say that there was a semantic ambiguity between a free relative and an embedded interrogative (along the lines of Cecchetto & Donati 2015) and this is the reason why the structure wh-*che* could be extended from free relative clauses to embedded interrogatives. However, we think that the question is more complex than that, and that the first link towards the intrusion of a relative structure in an interrogative one is not between embedded interrogatives and free relatives altogether but between embedded interrogatives and light headed free relatives. Free relatives can either be expressed by a simple wh item, as shown in (24), but Italian varieties (as other Romance languages) have the tendency to realize light heads, especially with the element corresponding to *what*, which, just like in French, is utterly impossible as a free relative (25) and requires a light head (26) (see Munaro 2000).

(24) Chi ha detto questo, ha sbagliato.
      'Who said this   was wrong'

(25) *Cosa hai detto, é sbagliato.
      'What you said   is wrong'

(26) Quello che hai detto,   é sbagliato.
      'The thing that you said is wrong'

As predicted under our proposal, if wh-*che* embedded interrogatives are free/
light-headed relative clauses, we expect the embedded interrogative with the
element corresponding to 'what' to be impossible at least in certain varieties.
This prediction seems to be born out: in certain Trentino dialects the embed-
ded interrogatives on 'what' cannot have the wh-item for 'what', but require the
light-head *quello che* "that that" as they do in real free relatives (Garzonio 2007).
Poletto & Sanfelici (to appear) attribute the spell out of a light head to the fact
that, as assumed by Cinque (2013) and originally proposed by Sauerland (1999,
2003), all relative clauses are double headed: they all have an external head lo-
cated in the DP spine and an internal one located inside the relative clause. Lan-
guages differ with respect to the head they lexically spell out, and free relatives
can be analyzed as restrictive relatives where neither head is lexically realized.
Notice however that there is an "intermediate stage" between real free relatives
and headed restrictive relative clauses, namely light headed relatives, which are
exactly the type of relatives that first manifest themselves in embedded inter-
rogative contexts. We surmise that the variation found in Old Venetian attests
precisely this: the first relative structures to be found in interrogative domains
are light headed relatives as the ones found with *lá o que* and *la chasion que*. The
fact that the first step of the evolution of the wh-*che* structure is a light headed
relative clause is shown by the fact that these are the only possible structures
even in languages, like French, where no other wh-item presents this possibility.
If French represents the first stage of the development of this structure, NEIDs
represent the second one: the usage is extended to wh-pronouns, where there
is no lexical light head. If this were the end of the story, we would expect that
all wh-items should allow for doubling except for the complex ones already con-
taining a lexical head. However, when we take into consideration the data pre-
sented in the previous section where we showed that the presence of the wh-*che*
in embedded interrogatives depends on the type of wh items introducing them,
this expectation is not fully fulfilled. The stage depicted by Polonia (2014) and
Garzonio (2007) for Trentino dialects only partially matches this expectation: we

find that the wh-items that tolerate the wh-*che* structure are a) those that still display the light head (like the case of *kel che* in (20)); b) those that allow for a null free relative head are not all possible wh-items, but there is a second hierarchy even if we exclude light headed relatives. The implicational scale in (23) shows that elements like *why* and *how* are much more resistant, even more that complex wh-items. We are forced to assume that there is one more factor at play here. If we leave complex wh-items aside, the hierarchy in (23) partially looks like the Keenan and Comrie's case hierarchy, which goes from the less complex to the most complex cases: here evidently what, where and who are less complex than why and how, which are at the rightmost edge of the scale. It is well known that the Keenan and Comrie's hierarchy is at play in relative clauses in the phenomenon that is known as the case containment condition, i.e. the condition ruling which case is spelled out on the lexical relative head when the case of the main clause and the case of the relative clause do not match. Poletto & Sanfelici (to appear) show that modern Italian generally resolves case mismatches in favor of the external case:

(27)   Partiró   con chi   hai incontrato ieri.
        'I will leave with whom you met yesterday'

(28)   *A   chi   hai telefonato é partito.
        'To whom you phoned   left'

This is the case also for the NEIDs we are considering, as the translation in modern Venetian shows:

(29)   Ndaró via   co   chi che te ga visto jeri.
        'I will leave with whom you met yesterday'

(30)   *A   chi che ti   ghe ga telefoná el ze partio.
        'To whom you phoned   left'

Suppose that embedded interrogatives in these dialects have the structure of free relative clauses (as the light headed cases overtly show). This means that they have two heads, a relative internal one, and an external one, which is the (null) DP that is the complement clause of verbs like 'ask'. If we apply the double-head idea to embedded interrogatives, we immediately explain the first step of the evolution, i.e. light headed relatives, which spell out both the external light head and the internal wh head: in *la chasion perché*, *la* is the determiner of the whole DP, *chasion* is the external head and *perché* represents the internal head

by means of a relative pronoun. Cases like *lá o che* display the external head (the deictic pronoun *lá*) and the internal one, which is made up of two components [*o che*]. This means that at the successive stage of development, i.e. the one of a real free relative with no lexically spelled out external head, we only have the internal one [*o che*]. One might wonder why an element like *che* intrudes into a wh-item and what portion of its internal structure it spells out. The fact that *che* can be part of a wh-item is actually straightforward if we consider the form corresponding to 'what' in standard Italian, namely *che cosa*. Poletto & Pollock (2009) propose the following internal structure for wh-items:

(31)　[_DisjP_　[_ExistP_　[_RestrictorP_　]]]

Suppose that in Italian *cosa* represents the restrictor, since it literally means 'thing' and *che* the existential component as in (32):

(32)　[_DisjP_　[_ExistP_ *che* [_RestrictorP_ *cosa*]]]

This structure immediately explains the complex nature of wh-pronouns and the ordering of the elements we observe. An independent argument in favor of the idea that wh-pronouns have the complex structure illustrated in (32) is that there are dialects where two components, i.e. the restrictor and the disjunctive as in (33) and (34) can occur separately giving rise to doubling structures (see Obenauer 2006, Munaro & Poletto 2018):

(33)　　Cossa inviti-to　chi?!
　　　　COSSA invite-you who(m)
　　　　'Who (the hell) are you inviting?!'

(34)　　Cossa ve-to　dove?!
　　　　COSSA go-you where
　　　　'Where (the hell) are you going?!'　　　　　[Paduan (Central Veneto)]

Notice that our free relative/interrogative case represents the third logical possibility besides the combinations of existential plus restrictor and restrictor plus disjunctive:

(35)　[_DisjP_ *o* [_ExistP_ *che* [_RestrictorP_　]]]

Notice that also this combination is found in doubling structures:

(36) Che 'ncontre-t chi?
      Wh meet-you who
      'Whom are you meeting?'

(37) Ch' ö-t   qual?
      Wh want-you which
      'Which one do you want?'   [Malonno (Eastern Lombard)]

On this basis we can conclude that the structures [wh *che*] in embedded interrogatives is not a case of low complementizers but the spell out of the ExistentialP, one of the internal projections of the wh-item. In this sense interrogative and relative pronouns are the same, i.e. they contain at least three layers, which can be lexically spelled out or not. The reason why the first embedded interrogatives to manifest the spell out of the existential component che are actually ambiguous with free relative clauses has to do with the fact that in general in relative clauses ExistentialP is always spelled out by *che* in Italian varieties.

5 Concluding remarks

In this work we have entertained the hypothesis that the occurrence of *che* after wh-items found in NEIDs is not a case of violation of the doubly filled comp filter, where the complementizer *che* sits in a low C° head. We have proposed that these structures, just like relative clauses, are the spell out of more than one internal projection of the wh-item. This explains why the first attested historically cases are indeed free relative clauses, since relative clauses generally spell out the existential portion of the internal relative head. It can also explain well known cases of wh-doubling in simple wh-questions, which are rather rare even in languages like colloquial German and non-standard Dutch varieties which display a so called scope marker wh- doubling the actual wh-item in long extractions.

References

Caponigro, I. 2003. *Free not to ask: On the semantics of free relatives and wh-words crosslinguistically*: UCLA dissertation.
Cecchetto, C. & Donati, C. 2015. *(Re)labeling*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.
Cinque, G. 2013. *Typological studies. Word order and relative clauses*. London: Routledge.

Garzonio, J. 2007. Complementatori nelle interrogative delle varietà trentine: Variazione diatopica e generazionale. In G. Marcato (ed.), *Dialetto, memoria e fantasia. Atti del convegno, Sappada 28 giugno-2 luglio 2006*. 179–183. Padova: Unipress.

Koopman, H. 1996. The spec head configuration. *Syntax at Sunset, UCLA Working Papers in Syntax and Semantics* 1. 37–64.

Munaro, N. 2000. Free relative clauses as defective *wh*-elements: evidence from the northwestern Italian dialects. *University of Venice Working Papers in Linguistics* 10. 89–120.

Munaro, N. & Poletto, C. 2018. Pattern of *wh*-in-situ and wh-doubling in the Northern Italian dialects. Paper presented at the Geneva Workshop on optional *wh*-in-situ, January 2018.

Obenauer, H.G. 2006. Special interrogatives – left periphery, *wh*-doubling, and (apparently) optional elements. In J. Doetjes & P. Gonzalves (eds.), *Romance Languages and Linguistic Theory 2004 – selected papers from 'Going Romance 2004'*. 247–273. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Parry, M. 2003. Cosa ch'a l'é sta storia? The interaction of pragmatics and syntax in the development of WH-interrogatives with overt complementizer in Piedmontese. In C. Tortora (ed.), *The syntax of Italian dialects*. 152–174. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Poletto, C. 2000. *The higher functional field: Evidence from Northern Italian dialects*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Poletto, C. & Pollock, J.Y. 2009. Another look at *wh*-questions in romance: The case of Mendriosiotto and its consequence for the analysis of French in situ and embedded interrogatives. In D. Torck & W.L. Wetzels (eds.), *Romance Languages and Linguistic Theory 2006 – selected papers from 'Going Romance 2006'*. 199–258. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Poletto, C. & Sanfelici, E. 2015. On demonstratives in relative clauses. In M.G. Busà & S. Gesuato (eds.), *Lingue e contesti. Studi in onore di Alberto Mioni*. 561–571. Padua: CLEUP.

Poletto, C. & Sanfelici, E. 2018. Demonstratives as relative pronouns: New insight from Italian varieties. In M. Coniglio, A. Murphy, E. Schlachter & T. Veenstra (eds.), *Atypical demonstratives. Syntax, semantics and pragmatics*. 95–126. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Poletto, C. & Sanfelici, E. to appear. On relative complementizers and relative pronouns. *Linguistic Variation* .

Poletto, C. & Vanelli, L. 1995. Gli introduttori delle frasi interrogative nei dialetti italiani settentrionali. In E. Banfi, G. Bonfadini, P. Cordin & M. Iliescu (eds.),

Italia settentrionale: crocevia di idiomi romanzi. Atti del convegno internazionale di studi. Trento, 21-23 ottobre 1993. 145–158. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Polonia, K. 2014. *Wh + che: Die komplexe Struktur einer Interrogativstrategie am Beispiel der Trienter Varietäten*: Goethe University Frankfurt MA thesis.

Rizzi, L. 1997. The fine structure of the left periphery. In L. Haegeman (ed.), *Elements of grammar: Handbook in generative syntax.* 281–337. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Sauerland, U. 1999. Total reconstruction, PF-movement and derivational order. *Linguistics* 7. 1–38.

Sauerland, U. 2003. Unpronounced heads in relative clauses. In K. Schwabe & W. Susanne (eds.), *The interfaces.* 205–226. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

For Liliane:
Friend, muse, linguist extraordinaire, and world's second most famous Belgian

Andrew Radford[*]

Liliane's academic career and mine have been intertwined for decades. We both have a common obsession with collecting 'real' data on English usage. I must admit, however, that Liliane's method of collecting data is far more rigorous than mine: she collects examples of interesting structures in written English while reading the Guardian (etc.) on her exercise bike; I collect data on unusual structures in spoken English while lying prostate on a sofa (sporadically dipping into a pot of Ben and Jerry's Chocolate ice-cream) and listening to live commentary on the latest football or cricket matches on radio or TV. We exchange data regularly, as you'll see from numerous footnotes in her excellent (2012) monograph *Adverbial Clauses, Main Clause Phenomena, and Composition of the Left Periphery* citing weird structures that I'd collected (or dreamed up), and from the frequent mentions of her in my forthcoming CUP monograph on *Colloquial English: Structure and Variation*.

Liliane once told me that her interest in generative syntax had been sparked by reading my 1981 *Transformational Syntax* book as a student, and that she'd always wanted to write a joint article with me. Together with a Spanish colleague (Ángel Jiménez-Fernández from Sevilla), we worked on a paper on extraction out of subjects in English and Spanish, which was eventually published with the title 'Deconstructing the Subject Condition in terms of cumulative constraint violation' in *The Linguistic Review* (2014, vol. 31, pp. 73–150). The paper combines Minimalist, Cartographic and processing perspectives, and was well received: Chomsky is reported to have liked it, and (at the time of writing) it is the tenth most frequently downloaded article on LR's website.

---

[*]The most famous being … no, not Poirot but rather Kevin de Bruyne. After all, he has his own wallpaper!

Over the years, each of us has provided inspiration for the other. For example, in my 2004 *Minimalist Syntax* book (p. 429), I reported the sentence 'What is thought has happened to him?' to have been produced by a reporter on BBC Radio 5. This observation prompted Liliane to take a deeper look at this type of structure (in which a *wh*-subject is raised out of a finite clause), culminating in the publication in 2017 of her article on 'Syntacticizing blends: the case of English *wh*-raising', written jointly with Lieven Danckaert.

Conversely, Liliane has made numerous insightful remarks which have guided and inspired my own research. For example, my forthcoming CUP monograph on *Colloquial English* has a lengthy chapter on non-canonical uses of the complementiser *that* in spoken English, and includes an appendix on the use of that in adverbial clauses in present-day English in structures such as the following (1b-h being taken from recordings I have made of live, unscripted radio broadcasts):[1]

(1) a. They got wet [because **that** it was raining]   (Alison Henry, pc)
     b. The reason that England won't win the world cup is [because **that** the younger players coming through are too spoiled]   (Andy Goldstein, Talksport Radio)
     c. Some people were talking about it as some sort of race riot, [as if **that** the Dutch team was split along racial lines]   (Andy Brassell, BBC Radio 5)
     d. [Although **that** they won the title], they finished on something of a low   (John Cross, Talksport Radio)
     e. [Even though **that** we lost], I'd still put that down as one of my favourite games   (Brett Lee, BBC Radio 5)
     f. And [when **that** we were 71 for none], there was a chance to sort of close the game out   (Peter Moores, BBC Radio 5)
     g. For many it was inevitable, [once **that** David Hay walked into the room] (Mike Costello, BBC Radio 5)
     h. That's been the dominant philosophy in Brazil, [ever since **that** they lost to Holland]   (Tim Vickery, Talksport Radio)

Such structures were found in Chaucer, and thus may well be an archaic feature which has gradually been dying out over the centuries, but which has survived in a minority of speakers from a wide variety of backgrounds: Andy Brassell, John

---

[1] I'm grateful to Cambridge University Press for allowing me to present this short summary of part of the discussion of adverbial clauses in §3.8 of my forthcoming monograph on *Colloquial English*.

Cross, Andy Goldstein, Matt Scott and Tim Vickery are Londoners, Mike Costello was born in Bromley, Peter Moores was born in Macclesfield, Graham Beecroft comes from Merseyside, Brett Lee was born in Wollongong (Australia), and Alison Henry comes from Belfast.

Given that much of Liliane's (2012) monograph was devoted to adverbial clauses, I discussed the data with her. She drew my attention to Lieven Danckaert's excellent book on *Latin Embedded Clauses: The Left Periphery* (Amsterdam: Benjamins, 2012), and he kindly sent me a copy of the book, and discussed the data with me. Danckaert argues that in adverbial clauses, there is parametric variation in respect of the position of subordinating conjunctions, with some occupying a high position in the periphery, and others a low position. This raises the possibility that the subordinating conjunction/SUB in the adverbial clause in a sentence like (1a) above could occupy a high position in the periphery in minority varieties which allow the use of *that* in adverbial clauses, along the lines shown below:

(2)   They got wet [$_{SUBP}$ [$_{SUB}$ because] [$_{FORCEP}$ [$_{FORCE}$ that] [$_{FINP}$ [$_{FIN}$ ø] it was raining]]]

By contrast, in majority varieties which don't allow that in adverbial clauses, the conjunction may occupy a lower position in the periphery — perhaps FIN, as below:

(3)   They got wet [$_{SUBP}$ [$_{SUB}$ ø] [$_{FORCEP}$ [$_{FORCE}$ ø] [$_{FINP}$ [$_{FIN}$ because] it was raining]]]

This would mean that there is no peripheral head position after *because* for *that* to occupy in (3), so accounting for why mainstream varieties don't allow *that* after conjunctions.

However, there is evidence against analysing conjunctions like *because* as FIN heads. For one thing, a key defining property of low subordinating conjunctions identified by Danckaert (2012) is that they allow fronted constituents to precede them within the periphery of the adverbial clause containing them. However, *as* and *though* seem to be the only two subordinating conjunctions which potentially allow this kind of fronting in English, e.g. in structures such as the following:

(4)   a.   [*Hard* **though** he tried —], he could not open the door
        b.   [*Try* **as** he might —], he could not open the door

By contrast, other subordinating conjunctions don't allow periphery-internal fronting

— as we see from the ungrammaticality of the adverbial clauses bracketed be-
low:

(5)   a.   *[*His passport* **because** he had forgotten —], he had to return home
      b.   *[*Harder* **if** you try —], you will surely succeed
      c.   *[*Hot* **when** you feel —], you should take off your jacket

Thus it seems clear that while (some variant of) the analysis in (3) might be ap-
propriate for *though/as*, it would not be appropriate for other subordinating con-
junctions (like *because*, for example), since they do not allow this kind of fronting.

Still, one way of modifying the analysis in (3) in such a way as to account for
because-type conjunctions not allowing fronting might be to suppose that they
have a reduced periphery which contains only FINP. On this alternative view, in
place of (3) above we would have (6) below:

(6)   They got wet [$_{FINP}$ [$_{FIN}$ because] it was raining]

An analysis along the lines of (6) would account both for the absence of fronting
in because-clauses (since there is no position in the periphery above because to
house the fronted constituent), and for absence of that in mainstream varieties
(since there is no position in the periphery below FIN to accommodate that).

However, the claim embodied in analyses like (3), (6) that the subordinating
conjunction is positioned in FIN in adverbial clauses which don't contain that is
undermined by the observation that subordinating conjunctions used without
that can be followed by a range of peripheral constituents which are typically
found in clauses containing FORCEP, including (as in the examples below) pe-
ripheral exclamative, interrogative, imperative, negative and topical constituents:

(7)   a.   It's easy to forget about Everton, [because what a good run they're
            having!]   (John Cross, Talksport Radio)
      b.   We puzzle over it a bit, and then brush it off and go on with our daily
            lives [because what can we do?]   (steamcommunity.com)
      c.   I'm telling you [because please don't let the rain deter you]   (tripad-
            visor.com)
      d.   That is why I want a united Europe [because never again should we
            have wars amongst ourselves ...]   (otib.co.uk)
      e.   I've gotta see what I can do moving forward, [because the past, I can't
            change]   (Paul Stewart, Talksport Radio)
      f.   That's [because Smalling and Jones, neither of them have made it for

(John Murray, BBC Radio 5)

Given the assumption that only FORCEP constituents can contain topicalised, focused or fronted constituents, it follows that adverbial clauses without that must contain a FORCEP projection. This conclusion is reinforced by the observation that the bracketed adverbial clause can have its own force, and hence be exclamative in (7a), interrogative in (7b), imperative in (7c), and declarative in (7d)-(7f).

What this suggests is that a co-ordinating conjunction like because is a causal subordinator which can have as its complement a clause which is interrogative, imperative, exclamative or declarative in force.[2] A straightforward way of capturing this insight is to treat because as a SUB head which selects a FORCEP complement that can be interrogative, imperative, exclamative or declarative in type. On this view, the subordinate clause in (1a) above would have the peripheral structure shown below:

(8)   They got wet [SUBP [SUB because] [FORCEP [FORCE ø/%that] [FINP [FIN ø] it was raining]]]

In most varieties of English, the declarative FORCE head in a structure like (8) would receive a null spellout; but in a minority of varieties, it could be spelled out as that. However, this raises the question of why use of that in adverbial clauses should be allowed in some varieties but not in others.

One possible answer is that the use (or non-use) of that after a subordinating conjunction reflects a low-level difference in the PF spellout conditions for that. One implementation of this idea would be to suppose that minority varieties which allow SUB+that structures permit non-initial peripheral heads to be spelled out as that in appropriate kinds of embedded clause (including in clauses introduced by a subordinating conjunction/SUB) whereas mainstream varieties which don't allow SUB+that structures only permit a peripheral head to be spelled out as that when it is the highest head/first word in its containing clause. This would mean that most speakers will not allow the FORCE head in (8) to be spelled out as that because it is not the first word in the periphery of the adverbial clause containing it (the first word being the SUB constituent because), but a minority of speakers will allow such structures.

---

[2]I set aside here what Liliane (in her 2012 monograph, ch.4) calls 'central adverbial clauses', which she argues to be closely integrated into the matrix clause, and to have a reduced peripheral structure.

Speakers of the minority variety which does not require that to be clause-initial would also be expected to allow the complementiser that to be used non-initially in other types of clause, like those below:

(9) a. I think, [as expected, so far that the Greeks are not showing any real ambition]   (Danny Mills, BBC Radio 5)

   b. I think [Bayern Munich that they are a team to really watch in the final stages]   (Andy Brassell, BBC Radio 5)

   c. I just think [Arsenal, honestly, that they are gonna fall behind if they don't sign a striker]   (John Cross, Talk Sport Radio)

   d. The fact that he's been around for so long, I think, is testimony to [just what a good player that he is]   (Tim Vickery, BBC Radio 5)

   e. It's unbelievable when you think what a big city Paris is and [what a potentially big club that PSG are]   (Andy Brassell, BBC Radio 5)

   f. It'll be interesting to see [what sort of game that he puts on]   (John Cross, Talk Sport Radio)

   g. We're hoping JLo will come into the studio, just so she can show us [what moves that they make]   (Andy Goldstein, Talk Sport Radio)

   h. I just don't understand [why that you would present a fatted calf to sell]   (John Cross, Talksport Radio)

   i. I'm aware of the speed [with which that they work]   (Tim Vickery, BBC Radio 5)

Here we find non-initial that preceded within the bracketed clauses by italicised peripheral constituents which include in situ adjuncts or dislocated topics, and fronted exclamative, interrogative or relative wh-constituents. As will be apparent, there would seem to be an overlap between speakers who allow use of that in adverbial clauses like those in (1), and speakers who allow that in the types of embedded clauses bracketed in (9): for example, Andy Brassell, John Cross, Andy Goldstein, and Tim Vickery use that in both types of structure. Such speakers do not restrict that to spelling out a periphery-initial head.

An alternative approach to accounting for the use of that in adverbial clauses would be to treat use or non-use of that as a matter of selection, and suppose that in standard varieties, subordinating conjunctions select a FORCEP complement with a null head, whereas in some minority varieties they can select a FORCEP complement whose head can either be spelled out as that, or receive a null spellout. However, this would raise questions about the nature of the relevant

selection restrictions.[3] One possible answer would be to posit that an overt complementiser like that has to be licensed by an immediately adjacent superordinate constituent of an appropriate kind, and that standard varieties of present-day English impose the following constraint on complementiser licensing:

(10) Complementiser Licensing Constraint/CLC
      In standard varieties of English, the complementiser that cannot be licenced by a peripheral head.

CLC would allow superordinate lexical heads like the verb think, the adjective sure and the noun claim to license use of that in complement clauses like those bracketed below:

(11) a. I think [that you are right]
      b. I am sure [that he will come]
      c. Your claim [that he lied] is preposterous

At the same time, CLC would rule out a structure such as that below, so preventing the interrogative complementisers whether/if from licensing that:

(12) I wonder [$_{FORCEP}$ [$_{FORCE}$ ø] [$_{INTP}$ Op [$_{INT}$ whether/if] [$_{FINP}$ [$_{FIN}$ ø/*that] it will rain]]]

More relevant to our present discussion is the observation that CLC would also rule out the use of that in adverbial clauses like that below (cf. (8) above) in standard varieties of English:

(13) They got wet [$_{SUBP}$ [$_{SUB}$ because] [$_{FORCEP}$ [$_{FORCE}$ that] [$_{FINP}$ [$_{FIN}$ ø] it was raining]]]

This is because CLC bars that from being licensed by a peripheral head like the SUB(ordinating conjunction) because. By contrast, in minority varieties in which

---

[3]We might try to derive the relevant selectional properties from independent properties of the conjunction and/or the complementiser. For example, in her 1992 CUP book *Theory and Description in Generative Grammar: A Case Study of West Flemish*, Liliane relates the obligatoriness of the complementiser dat$_{that}$ in adverbial clauses (and other embedded clauses) in West Flemish to the observation that the complementiser inflects for agreement with the clause subject, and suggests that the complementiser has to be overt in order to spell out the agreement features which it carries. However, as Liliane herself notes (pc), such an analysis would be difficult to extend to English, given that the complementiser *that* in English is generally optional and does not inflect for agreement.

CLC is inoperative, structures like (13) are permitted. Indeed it would seem from examples like those below that structures like (12) are also permitted by some speakers:

(14)   a.   I just don't know [whether that they will have the same attitude] (Mark Saggers, Talksport Radio)

b.   It's just a question of [whether that Liverpool can get their money back]   (John Cross, Talksport Radio)

c.   I'm not sure [whether that Spurs fans will accept him] (John Cross, Talksport Radio)

d.   I do wonder [whether that their squad lacks the depth of City's] (Dominic Fyfield, Talksport Radio)

e.   England have enforced the follow-on. [Whether that they could have done it had it not been raining], I'm not sure   (Jack Bannister, Talksport Radio)

f.   It's not clear, though, [if that they're just infecting the microbes that make us sick]   (Carl Zimmer, BBC Radio 5)

However, speakers who treat that as inherently non-interrogative would be expected to reject sentences like (14), even if they accept the use of that in adverbial clauses like that bracketed in (13).

Clearly, there is much more to be said about the use of the complementiser that in adverbial clauses, but I shall not attempt to delve further into the matter here, since the point of this brief excursus into adverbial clauses is that it illustrates many of Liliane's finest qualities. Firstly, she is an enormously productive and perceptive linguist: her book on *Adverbial Clauses* amply illustrates the depth of her scholarship, and the insights of her analysis. Secondly, she is always willing to help, whether by providing copies of articles which nobody else seemed to be able to find (including on one occasion an article by Jim McCloskey which Jim himself had lost!), or by delving into her archives of non-canonical structures in written English to find analogous structures, or by asking questions which nobody had previously thought to ask (e.g. when I was working on *how come* questions, she asked whether they allow Subject Drop, and that set me off on a new stream of thought). Enjoy your retirement, Liliane, free from the shackles of bungling bureaucrats, and from their mindless metrics which reduce evaluating the work of distinguished staff and their students to mind-numbing number-crunching.

Left peripheral NEG as a discourse particle

Henk van Riemsdijk

The present little article is in reality only a footnote.[1] But it is a footnote to several topics. First it is a side remark on the use of sentence-initial negative markers in older versions of the Germanic languages, in particular Gothic, Old English and Old High German. Second, it shows that there are instances of sentence initial negative markers also in modern varieties of German, and furthermore that these cases are best treated as instances of discourse particles. These are all topics that I have never before worked on, but they do figure prominently in the work of Liliane Haegeman.

It is generally believed that sentence initial particles, which used to be quite frequent in older varieties of German, have been lost. See, for example, Petrova (2017), particularly section 4 entitled "The loss of left-peripheral sentence particles and the rise of modal particles in German". In the few pages below I will argue that while there may not be many, there definitely are modal particles (or discourse particles) at the left edge in at least some varieties of present day German.

In some modern varieties of German, sentence initial occurrences of the negative particle ('nicht') can be observed. The phenomenon is primarily limited to Austrian German but is marginally also present (or at least perceived as 'something that some people say') in other southern varieties of German, see for instance the example (5) from Zurich German (Züritüütsch) below. The meaning of this sentence initial negative marker (henceforth NEG1) is, however, quite distinct from 'normal' sentence negation. NEG1 roughly expresses something rang-

ing from great surprise to indignation about the (non-negated) state of affairs described in the sentence. Here are some examples with various paraphrases:

(1)   Nicht kommst Du jetzt mit noch einer   Fussnote!
        not   come   you now with yet   another footnote
        'Don't tell me you are coming up with yet another footnote!'
        'It just cannot be true that you are presenting another footnote!'

(2)   Nicht habt ihr die Kekse   schon   alle gegessen!
        not   have you the cookies already all   eaten
        'Don't tell me that you have eaten all the cookies!'
        'I cannot believe that you have eaten all the cookies.'
        'You have already eaten all the cookies? – You must be kidding!'

Sometimes there is a similar alternative with NEG1 followed by a *that*-sentence:

(3)   a.   Nicht kommt mir der Kerl noch   einmal ins Haus!
              not   comes me that guy another time   in   the   house
              'It just is not going to happen that that guy comes into my house again!'
        b.   Nicht dass mir der Kerl noch einmal ins Haus kommt!

Note that (1), (2) and (3a) have V2 and not VFinal as in (3b). This is reminiscent of Swiss German *wäisch* ('you know/know you'), cf. van Riemsdijk (2001b), which I called a *wh*-prefix. Here's an example:

(4)   a.   Wäisch   wänn de Hans geschter häi   choo isch?
              do-you-know when the Hans yesterday home come has
              'Do you know when Hans came home yesterday?'
        b.   Wäisch   wänn isch de Hans geschter häi   choo?
              know-you when has the Hans yesterday home come
              'You won't believe what time Hans came home yesterday!'

(4a) is a real question, but (4b) is something like a rhetorical question: the speaker knows the answer and is so horrified by the answer (sc. 4am) that he wants to tell the listener. (4a) has a *wh*-question embedded under the question introducing verb *wäisch* ('do you know'), which is also a yes-no question. Accordingly the embedded verb is in the final position. In (4b) the *wh*-question is the main clause (V2) in which *wäisch* is prefix to the *wh*-word, comparable to *wh*-suffixes like *the*

hell.[2]

The NEG1 examples, while predominantly found in Austria do not seem completely out in other German-speaking areas. Here is a Swiss German example I find acceptable:

(5) Nöd häsch   scho   alles   ggässe.
     not   have-you already everything eaten
     'Don't tell me you have already eaten everything!'

But for me the VFinal version is ungrammatical.

(6) *Nöd dass du scho alles ggässe häsch.

There are other variants that are clearly similar but have a different use, definitely not as discourse particles, and are, as far as I can tell, much less common. The Austrian daily Der Standard, for example, has a column called

(7) Ned sei deppert!
     not be stupid
     'Don't be stupid!'

The question arises as to what the origin of NEG1 construction is. Old English did have initial negation, as the following example shows:[3]

(8) Nat may the woful   spirit in myn herte Declare o   point of alle my
     not can   the woeful spirit in my   heart declare one bit   of all   my
     sorwes   smerte
     sorrows painful
     'The woeful spirit in my heart cannot clarify one bit of all my painful sorrows'   (ca. 1385, Chaucer CT.Kn. A.2765: MED)

But examples of this sort can also be found in Old High German, as shown in the following examples from Migdalski (2016: 117, ex. (53c); 120 ex.(60)):

(9) Ni   liugu ih dauid.
     NEG lie   I David
     'I will not lie to David'   (OHG, Isidor, 612, (Axel-Tober 2007: 62))

---

[2] See van Riemsdijk (2001b). I am, of course, tempted to consider the prefix *wäisch* a graft, just like, e.g. *far from* in *a far from simple question*, cf. van Riemsdijk (2001a).

[3] The example is taken from Koike (2016: 251, ex. (170a)).

(10)   Ni-santa got sinan sun.
         NEG-sent God his   son
         'God did not send his son' (OHG, Tatian, 407, 30, (Axel-Tober 2007: 61))

Breitbarth (2013) lists also some examples of initial negation from Old Low German (her example (1a): Old Saxon) and Old Dutch (her example (2a): Old Low Franconian).

(11)   'Ni bium ic', quað he, 'that barn godes...'
         NEG am   I   spoke he the   child god.GEN
         'I am not the child of God, he said'   (Old Saxon. Heliand, 915)

(12)   Ne farlātu tu mi!
         NEG forsake you me
         'Do not forsake me!'   (Old Low Franconian. WP LXX.9.2)

Other, later, examples are found in certain Bible or Torah translations of commandments. Here are a few cases I found:[4]

(13)   Aber wenn ist an ihm ein Makel, lahm oder blind, irgendeinen
         but if   is on it a flaw   lame or   blind, any
         schlechten Makel, nicht sollst Du es schlachten für JHWH, deinen
         bad   flaw   not   should you it slaughter   for JHWH, your
         Gott.
         God
         'But if it has a flaw, being lame or blind, any bad flaw, do not slaughter it
         for JHWH, your God!'

(14)   Nicht sollst du ehebrechen,   nicht sollst du töten, nicht sollst
         not   should you commit-adultery, not   should you kill, not   should
         du begehren, etc.
         you covet
         'Not shalt thou commit adultery, not shalt thou kill, not shalt thou covet,
         ...'   (Romans chapter 13)

(15)   Nicht darf er sich   laben an Bächen, flutenden Strömen von Honig
         not   may he himself refresh at creeks, flowing   rivers   of honey
         und Milch.
         and milk

---

[4]The examples in (13) to (16) are from Paganini (2009), example (17) is from Krüger (2001). The glosses and translations are mine.

(16)   Aber die Nichtswürdigen, wie geflohene (d.h. verabscheute) Dornen
         but   the worthless-ones, like detested   horns
         sind sie   alle, denn nicht werden sie   mit der Hand gefasst.
         are they all, for   not   are   they by the hand taken
                                    (2. Samuel chapter 23 v. 6-13; Luther translation)

(17)   Viele wirst Du lenken, wenn die Vernunft Dich lenkt: von ihr wirst
         many will   you guide, if   the reason   you guides: from her will
         du lernen, was und wie du es anpacken musst: nicht wirst du den
         you learn   what and how you it tackle   must: not   shall you the
         Dingen anheimfallen.
         things fall-prey-to
                                                  (Krüger 2001: Seneca Epistles 37,4)

Turning now to the syntactic position and semantic role of NEG1, observe
first, that it's interpretation is, essentially, extraclausal. This is easily seen from
the ample translations provided above for the examples in (1)-(3). This obser-
vation is further strengthened by the fact that the NEG1 element is itself often
paraphrased by some short sentence such as 'don't tell me' or 'it just cannot be
true' in example (1). The special status of NEG1 is also evidenced by the fact that
the negative marker induces a clear meaning contrast with the clause internal
negation. Consider the following triple of examples:

(18)   a.   Nicht kommst Du morgen   wieder zu spät.
               not   come   you tomorrow again too late
               'Don't tell me you are going to be late again tomorrow!'
         b.   Du wirst morgen   nicht wieder zu   spät kommen.
               you will tomorrow not   again too late come
               'You will not be late again tomorrow!'
         c.   Du wirst doch nicht etwa   morgen   wieder zu spät
               you will surely not   perhaps tomorrow again too late
               kommen?
               come
               'Surely you will not be late again tomorrow – don't you dare!'

(18a) is the typical case of NEG1: the speaker expresses great dismay if the hearer
were to repeat being late tomorrow. It is a thinly veiled threat of blame or even
punishment. (18b) is a bland statement: you will not be late tomorrow. Of course

238

it could, given the right pragmatic circumstances be used as dismay or threat, but it can just as easily mean something like it will not be snowing tomorrow, so the train will be on time and there is no reason why you should be late. (18c), however, shows that standard discourse particles (or modal particles as they are sometimes also called) such as *doch* and *etwa* can achieve an effect quite similar to the one caused by NEG1.

In Bayer & Struckmeier (2017), one of the properties of discourse particles they stress is that they are similar to 'high adverbs' (see in particular Cinque 1999). There are indeed good reasons for equating NEG1 with high adverbs, however I will not venture into the morass of the complex structure of the left periphery. See Rizzi (1997) for influential proposals and Haegeman & Lohndal (2017) for some critical discussion.

In view of the fact that you cannot be higher than the leftmost element in a sentence, it is, therefore, important to ask if there are any other potential cases of leftmost adverbs, under which I would subsume adjectives that are neither attributive nor predicative in relation to some element within the sentence. Martin Prinzhorn (p.c.) has pointed out to me a term paper by a student of his, David Diem, who has observed that a relevant construction can be found in Swiss German with certain adjectives, in particular *schön* ('nice'), *guet* ('good') and *schad* ('shame, pity, too bad'). Here are some examples that Diem found in the Swiss SMS Corpus (Stark et al. 2009-2015).

(19) Schön gits di   min schatz!
      nice   exist you my treasure
      'Nice that you exist, my dear!'

(20) Guet bisch   früe ufs   fäscht choo!
      good are-you early to-the party come
      'A good thing you came early to the party!'

(21) Schad häsch du morn   nöd frei,...
      pity   have you tomorrow not free
      'A pity you are not free (sc. from work) tomorrow...'

One possible hypothesis might be that the adjective is really a predicate adjective in a structure like 'it is A', in Swiss German '*s isch A*', with the 'it is' part elided (or silent). Indeed such predicative adjective constructions can be construed with either V2 or with complementizer and VFinal. The VFinal variant of (21), for example, would be (22).

(22)   Schad dass du morn nöd frei häsch,…

Recall that we observed above that the NEG1 is often best paraphrased by a sentential expression as was mentioned between the examples (17) and (18) above. Future research will have to show whether left-peripheral discourse particles are limited to these instances of reduced mini-clauses.

    To conclude, here is a particularly nice example of a Swiss German adjectival adverb in first position.

(23)   Schön isch-s hüt   schön!
        nice   is-it   today nice
        'It's nice that it's nice today!' (= It is a pleasant fact that the weather is nice today)

References

Axel-Tober, K. 2007. *Studies on Old High German Syntax: Left periphery, verb placement and verb second*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Bayer, J. & Struckmeier, V. 2017. The status quo of research on discourse particles in syntax and semantics. In J. Bayer & V. Struckmeier (eds.), *Discourse particles: Formal approaches to their syntax and semantics*. 1–14. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Breitbarth, A. 2013. Negation in the history of Low German and Dutch. In D. Willis, C. Lucas & A. Breitbarth (eds.), *The history of negation in the languages of Europe and the Mediterranean. Volume I case studies*. 190–238. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Cinque, G. 1999. *Adverbs and functional heads: A cross-linguistic perspective*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Haegeman, L. & Lohndal, T. 2017. Be careful how you use the left periphery. In T. Lohndal (ed.), *Formal grammar: Theory and variations across English and Norwegian*. 203–228. London: Routledge.

Koike, K. 2016. *Synchronic and diachronic aspects of locative inversion and negative inversion in English*: Nagoya University dissertation.

Krüger, G. 2001. *Seneca über das rechte Leben / ausgewählt, übersetzt, zusammengestellt mit Einleitung und Anmerkungen*. Heidelberg: Müller.

Migdalski, K. 2016. *Second position effects in the syntax of Germanic and Slavic languages*. Wrocław: Wydawnictwo Uniwersytetu Wrocławskiego.

Paganini, S. 2009. *Nicht darfst du zu diesen Wörtern etwas hinzufügen. Die Rezption des Deuteronomiums in der Tempelrolle: Sprache, Autoren und Hermeneutik*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz Verlag.

Petrova, S. 2017. On the status and interpretation of the left-peripheral sentence particles *inu* and *ia* in Old High German. In J. Bayer & V. Struckmeier (eds.), *Discourse particles: Formal approaches to their syntax and semantics*. 304–331. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

van Riemsdijk, H. 2001a. A far from simple matter. Syntactic reflexes of syntax-pragmatics misalignments. In I. Kenesei & R.M. Harnish (eds.), *Perspectives on Semantics, Pragmatics, and Discourse: A festschrift for Ferenc Kiefer*. 21–41. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

van Riemsdijk, H. 2001b. *WH*-prefixes: The case of *wäisch* in Swiss German. In C. Schaner-Wolles, J. Rennison & F. Neubarth (eds.), *Naturally! Linguistic studies in honour of Wolfgang Ulrich Dressler presented on the occasion of his 60th birthday*. 423–431. Torino: Rosenberg & Sellier.

Rizzi, L. 1997. The fine structure of the left periphery. In L. Haegeman (ed.), *Elements of grammar: Handbook in generative syntax*. 281–337. Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers.

Stark, E., Ruef, B. & Ueberwasser, S. 2009-2015. Swiss SMS coprus. Zurich: University of Zurich. `https://sms.linguistik.uzh.ch`.

'Recycling' evidentiality: a research program

Johan Rooryck

Abstract

In this paper, I challenge the idea that evidentiality constitutes a grammatical category of its own. I propose that it should be viewed as a grammatical mechanism that creates evidential meanings by recombinations of features 'recycled' from other, more basic grammatical categories.

1 Evidentiality as a grammatical category

The languages of the world display a wide variety of grammatical markers to express evidentiality, ranging from dedicated morphemes to adverbs and parentheticals. Despite this expressive variety, evidentials form a closed class system of mutually exclusive markers.[1] The range of evidential meanings that is expressed is limited to 3 or 4 in most languages. There is also a striking consistency across languages in the types of evidence expressed by these markers. Many authors have proposed a basic distinction between direct and indirect evidence types (see Table 1) which can be further subdivided into at least hearsay and quotative on the one hand, and inference/ conjecture on the other (Givón 1982, Bybee 1985, Willett 1988: 57):

Table 1: Principal types of evidential markers

Direct evidence	Personal experience of the speaker: visual/ auditory/ other sensory
Indirect evidence	Reported to the speaker: hearsay/ quotative
	Inference/ conjecture by the speaker.

---

[1]I dedicate this article to Liliane Haegeman on the occasion of her retirement, with respect, admiration, and gratitude for her impressive work in linguistics.

These evidence types can be illustrated by Faller's (2002) data on Cuzco Quechua in (1), a language that features dedicated morphemes for three types of evidential meaning:

(1)   a.   Para-sha-n-**mi**
             rain-PROG-3-BPG
             p='It is raining.'
             EV: speaker sees that it is raining
       b.   Para-sha-n-**chá.**
             rain-PROG-3-CONJ
             p='It is possibly raining.'
             EV: speaker conjectures that it might be raining.
       c.   Para-sha-n-**si.**
             rain-PROG-3-REP
             p='It is raining.'
             EV: speaker was told that it is raining
             ([Cuzco Quechua], from Faller 2002)

According to Faller (2002), the morpheme *-mi* in (1a) indicates that the speaker claims to have direct, visual evidence (BPG = best possible grounds) for the fact that it is raining. By contrast, the morpheme *-chá* in (1b) expresses the speaker's conjecture, and *-si* in (1c) reflects hearsay (reportative) (Faller 2002).

The organization of evidence types in Table 1 suggests that evidentials constitute a cross-linguistically homogeneous grammatical category. The evidence types are not only constant across languages, they are also limited in terms of their semantics. In principle, the number of evidence types could have been much higher. As Speas (2008) notes, it is easy to imagine additional indirect evidence types, such as divine revelation, custom, legal edict, or parental authority. No language has such indirect evidentials: there are just the subcategories of direct and indirect evidence, with indirect evidence dividing further into hearsay/quotation and inference/ conjecture. The limited nature of this set of subcategories is then implicitly taken as evidence for the idea that evidentials form a closed class of mutually exclusive functional elements that exhibit a paradigmatic pattern of oppositions, just like other grammatical categories. The data from Cuzco Quechua, where dedicated evidential morphemes function as mutually exclusive elements of a closed class paradigm, seem to confirm such an analysis.

2 'Splitters' and 'recyclers'

A major discussion regarding evidentiality revolves around the question whether evidentiality should be 'split off' as a grammatical category in its own right, or whether it is a grammatical notion that 'recycles' existing grammatical categories for its own purpose.[2] 'Splitters' argue that the specific range of evidential meanings in paradigmatic opposition militates in favor of a separate grammatical status for evidentiality, on a par with categories such as tense, aspect, modality, or person. Evidence types such as witness, hearsay (reportative), and inference are then viewed as universal, elementary features of human language. Just like other functional categories, evidentiality is assigned a specific functional head in the left periphery of the functional domain of the clause (Cinque 1999, Rooryck 2001a,b).[3] The view that evidentiality is a full-fledged grammatical category in its own right is implicitly or explicitly adopted by linguists of various theoretical persuasions (Hardman 1986, Cinque 1999, de Haan 1999, Lazard 2001, Aikhenvald 2004, Davis et al. 2007, Aikhenvald 2018). It is fair to say that it reflects the dominant perspective.

'Recyclers', by contrast, seek to relate evidential meanings to the interaction of more elementary grammatical categories, such as tense, aspect, modality, sentence-type, and person. In many languages, evidential meanings do not involve dedicated morphemes at all. Rather, specific evidence types are parasitic on tense, aspect, modality, sentence-type, and person. In these languages, evidential meanings can be analyzed as the result of 'recycling' these more basic categories.[4] In what follows, I will reinterpret analyses of evidentiality that relate it to other categories in terms of 'recycling'. Of course, this does not necessarily mean that the authors of these analyses see themselves as 'recyclers' in the sense that I am proposing here.

---

[2] This article owes an important intellectual debt to Peggy Speas's work on evidentiality in the last 15 years. To a large extent, the present article does not do much more than taking further some of Peggy's positions and radicalizing them.

[3] See Speas (2008) for a critical analysis of this position.

[4] The idea of 'recycling' as a general grammatical mechanism has recently been given a more solid theoretical footing by Biberauer (2017) as an instance of her Maximize Minimal Means (MMM) principle.

3   Two sources for reportatives

Let me illustrate this with the example of reportative evidentiality. It is well known that the German modal *sollen* 'should' does double duty as a reportative evidential (Schenner 2008, Faller 2017):

(2)   Hubert soll   in Berlin sein
      Hubert should in Berlin be
      i. 'Hubert should be in Berlin (given his obligations)' (deontic modal)
      ii. 'Hubert is said to be in Berlin' (reportative) [German]

   Faller (2017) analyses reportative *sollen* 'should' in terms of extending the modal base of deontic *sollen* 'should' to an information modal base. This change in the modal base can be interpreted as an instance of the reportative 'recycling' the deontic modal for its own purposes. Other languages recycle different categories to build reportative meaning. Bruil (2014, 2015) shows that in Ecuadorean Siona, reportative evidentiality is part of the clause-typing system of the language, alongside declarative and interrogative:

(3)   a.   Aibi   nëcaji.
           Ai-i-bi nĩ$^{\widetilde{h}}$ka-**hi.** (declarative)
           old-NCL:M-SBJ stand-3S.M.PRS.ASS
           'The old man is standing.' (Bruil 2014: ch6, 11a)
      b.   Aibi   nëcaquë ?
           Ai-i-bi nĩ$^{\widetilde{h}}$ka-**ki** ? (interrogative)
           old-NCL :M-SBJ stand-2/3S.M.PRS.N.ASS
           'Is the old man standing?' (Bruil 2014: ch6, 11b)
      c.   Jao   ti co'meco   beocoña.
           Hã-õ ti ko'mẽ-ko beo-ko-**jã.** (reportative)
           dem.dst-ncl:f ana row-NOM.S.F neg.exist-2/3S.F.PRS.N.ASS-REP
           'She doesn't have gas.' (I am told). (Bruil 2014: ch6, 19) [Ecuadorean Siona]

Bruil (2014) analyses this integration of the reportative in the clause-typing system in the following way. She observes that in the declarative and the interrogative, epistemic authority for the proposition lies respectively with the Speaker and the Addressee. The Ecuadorean Siona reportative fits into this system by combining epistemic authority with a non-speech participant. Epistemic authority for the proposition is attributed to a third party that is neither Speaker nor Ad-

dressee. In this way, the essential meaning of reportative is derived (Bruil 2014). Importantly, the reportative functions entirely within the paradigmatic oppositions afforded by the grammatical category of sentence-type, rather than as a subcategory of evidentiality in the sense of Table 1.

The interest of the examples from German and Ecuadorean Siona lies in the fact that reportative meaning in either language is built from very different ingredients: in German, the reportative recycles deontic modality, while in Ecuadorean Siona, it is parasitic on the clause-typing system. These examples suggest that it is unlikely that 'reportative' is a primitive of the grammar, i.e. a particular paradigmatic exponent of an overarching and independent grammatical category 'evidentiality'. Rather, it suggests that such evidential meanings arise from recombinations of more abstract ingredients that are made available by more basic grammatical categories.

4 More examples of evidential 'recycling': tense and aspect

The reportative is not the only evidential meaning that can be derived from more basic grammatical categories. Nikolaeva (1999) observes that evidentials in Ostyak (Finno-Ugric, Siberia) interact with present and past tense. She derives the evidential meanings of hearsay and inference in terms of equivalence or overlap between situation types. Chung (2005) shows that Korean evidentials are homophonous with aspect and mood morphemes, and develops an analysis in which these interact with the location of the (1st person) speaker to derive evidential meanings. Lau & Rooryck (2017) argue that abstract properties of event structure, more specifically the event stages in accomplishments and achievements, are recycled in terms of information stages for the purposes of evidentiality. A semantic analysis in terms of stages allows them to bring out the close relation between aspect, indirect evidentiality, and mirativity in languages from Turkish and Bulgarian to Washo (Hokan, USA) and Hare (Athapaskan, Canada). For instance, the Turkish morpheme -miş can express perfect aspect, indirect evidentiality, and mirativity:

(4)   Kemal gel-mIş   [Turkish]
       Kemal come-PERF
       'Kemal came.'
       (a) INFERENCE: The Speaker sees Kemal's coat hanging in the front hall,

246

but has not yet seen Kemal.

(b) HEARSAY: The Speaker has been told that Kemal has arrived, but has not yet seen Kemal.

(c) SURPRISE: The Speaker hears someone approach, opens the door, and sees Kemal—a totally unexpected visitor."

(**?**: 187)

In terms of Lau & Rooryck (2017)'s analysis, this is possible because -*miş* is underspecified in terms of the nature of the stages involved. Informally put, -*miş* does not care whether its stages are of the event type (aspect) or of the information type (evidentiality/ mirativity). The morpheme -*miş* is primarily sensitive to the presence of a final stage holding at utterance time, regardless of its status as an information stage or an event stage. Once again, it looks like the more basic category of aspect is 'recycled' – bleached in this case – to express evidential meanings.

Such analyses suggest that evidentiality is not a grammatical category on a par with tense, aspect, modality, or sentence-type, but that it rather is a grammatical mechanism that is able to exploit these more primitive categories for its own purposes. This observation makes it very unlikely that evidentiality should be assigned its own functional category in the left periphery, in the sense of Cinque (1999).[5] For all intents and purposes, it is probably sufficient to syntactically represent Speaker and Addressee in the left periphery (Garrett 2001, Speas & Tenny 2003, Haegeman & Hill 2013), since speech participants play an important role in 'building' evidential meanings. Note that Speaker and Addressee in this sense are just special instances of the more abstract features 1P and 2P. Following Rooryck (2001a,b) and Speas (2004b,a) among many others, I would argue that syntactically represented speech participants are part and parcel of the elementary syntactic categories that are 'recycled' by evidentiality.

The idea that evidentiality does not occupy a well-defined, single position in the functional domain as other grammatical categories do is corroborated by Blain & Déchaine (2007). On the basis of various dialects of Cree, Blain & Déchaine (2007) argue that evidentials differ from each other as a function of the syntactic domain where they are introduced (their Evidential Domain Hypothesis). While this analysis does not call into question evidentiality as a separate category, it suggests that evidentiality arises at various levels of the functional spine, and need not be assigned its own morphosyntactic representation.

---

[5]Speas (2008) also questions the evidence for an evidential head. However, she does argue in favor of evidentiality as a distinct functional category on a par with tense (see Speas (2010).

5   Evidentiality as a closed class?

The analysis of evidentiality as a distinct grammatical category is further called into question by the fact that its boundaries are not very well established. More precisely, it does not constitute as much of a closed class with well-defined paradigmatic oppositions as the example of Quechua in (1) and the categorization in Table 1 would suggest. There are many instances of vaguely related and overlapping notions that are hard to reduce to strong paradigmatic oppositions. Even in Table 1, the distinction between inference and conjecture is not an immediately obvious one. Anderson (1986) provides a map of mental space for evidential meanings that includes different types of inferentials, as well as a category of expectation (as in English to be supposed to). In Carib, Hoff (1986) argues that introspective evidentials (knowledge through inference) should be distinguished from extraspective evidentials (culturally available knowledge).

More generally, the distinction between evidentiality and modality is notoriously difficult to establish (see Speas (2008, 2018) for an overview). Note also the overlap between indirect evidentiality and mirativity in Turkish and other languages mentioned above in the discussion of (4). The notion of mirativity does not even occur in Table 1, while it can be linked to indirect evidentiality. Building on earlier work by Adelaar (1977, 2013) on mirativity in Quechua, Mexas (2016) argues that mirativity should be understood as 'sudden realization': a punctual transition from the epistemic state of ignorance to that of awareness.[6] That redefinition brings mirativity much closer to the indirect evidentiality expressed by inference. As Lau & Rooryck (2017) argue, inference can be viewed as a non-punctual process towards an epistemic transition, and thus only differs in terms of the stages leading to the transition. However, this difference between mirativity and inference is in fact not a properly evidential distinction, but one that is based on notions of the succession of stages that are originally aspectual in nature. Although further study is needed, it is my contention that all oppositions in the evidential domain can ultimately be reduced to properties that are provided by other, more basic grammatical categories.

Assuming that evidential meanings are indeed based on 'recycled' features from more basic grammatical categories, the question arises how languages with designated evidential morphemes, such as Quechua, should be dealt with. This is an important question, since languages in which dedicated evidential

---

[6]Mirativity is sometimes argued to be entirely distinct from evidentiality (see Hengeveld & Olbertz 2012, Aikhenvald 2012.

morphemes are obligatorily expressed are often set apart from languages without such evidentials (Aikhenvald 2004, 2018). My proposal here would be that dedicated evidential morphemes are the result of grammaticalizing the properties of more basic grammatical categories into specific markers. de Haan (1999) shows that the diachronic sources of evidentials involve verbs of speech, vision, and inference; spatial expressions, and tense and aspect. However, the 'standalone' nature of a set of dedicated evidential morphemes is not enough to provide them with their own dedicated grammatical label. Rather, they are often morphosyntactically dependent on other categories in the functional domain. It is well known that the exact morphosyntactic position of dedicated evidential morphemes differs widely across languages, a point also made by Blain & Déchaine (2007). This positional variability is another argument against assigning them a specific position and label in the functional domain.

Despite the fuzziness of a number of evidential meanings, the fact remains that evidential morphemes often appear to function as if they were part of a closed class as in Table 1. However, from the perspective of 'recycling', this apparent paradigmatic organisation should be viewed as a consequence of the limited number of categories that are available for evidential 'recycling'. A limited variety of recycled categories can yield the circumscribed set of evidential meanings illustrated in Table 1. What remains surprising is that ingredients that are so different at the outset result in the same evidential outcomes, as in the case of reportatives discussed in section 3 above. A research program into the 'recycling' nature of evidentiality should explore the constraints on the type of categories that can be recycled for evidential purposes. The categories that can be recycled must have a set of abstract features that are compatible with evidential meanings. In the next section, I will examine Speas's (2010) proposal for such an abstract analysis of evidentiality, evaluate to what extent it fits 'recycling' purposes, and formulate a proposal of my own that complements Speas' (2010) approach.

6 Analyzing the basic features behind evidentiality: Speas (2010)

Speas (2010) develops a theoretical approach to evidentiality that aims at deriving specific evidential meanings from more abstract features and mechanisms. She argues against the notion of 'evidence' as a grammatical primitive, and pro-

poses an analysis of direct and indirect evidentiality in terms of the accessibility of situations, much inspired by Kratzer's (1977) analysis of modals in terms of a modal base of accessible situations, and a Reichenbachian approach to tense. Speas (2010) proposes three types of situation:

(5)   a.   Evaluated Situation (ES): The situation of which p is true
       b.   Reference Situation (RS): A situation or set of assumptions relevant to ES and DS
       c.   Discourse Situation (DS): The situation in which the sentence is being uttered

Between these Situations, two types of relations can hold: inclusion or accessibility. Indirect evidentiality involves a context in which the Reference Situation is accessible from the Evaluated Situation, while in direct evidentiality, the Reference Situation includes the Evaluated Situation. Further distinctions within direct and indirect evidentiality are made possible by the notion of Discourse Situation. In Hearsay, RS is not only accessible from ES, but RS is in turn accessible from DS. In other words, an ES in which 'Kim saw a bear' is true, is accessible to an RS where Kim tells the speaker that she saw a bear, and this RS is in turn accessible to the Discourse Situation where the speaker tells the hearer 'Kim saw a bear', while including into that statement an evidential expressing that this information was made accessible through Kim's telling the speaker. By contrast, in indirect evidentials (inferences), RS includes DS.

    Direct evidentials can likewise be further divided into 'internal' situations only the speaker can know (personal experience), and situations external to the speaker that are directly perceived through other senses. This is for instance the case in Eastern Pomo:

(6)   a.   bi.Yá pha.bé-kh-ink'e
             hand burn-PUNCTUAL-SENSORY
             'I burned my hand' (I feel the sensation of burning in my hand)
       b.   mí.-p-al   pha.bé-k-a
             3.sg.-male-PATIENT burn-PUNCTUAL-DIRECT
             'He got burned' (I have direct evidence, e.g., I saw it happen)[Eastern Pomo]

Speas (2010) analyses personal experience as a context in which RS includes both ES and DS. By contrast, direct evidentiality through other sensory perception is defined as a context in which RS not only includes ES, but is also accessible from

DS. In other words, Speas (2010) reanalyzes the labels for evidential meanings in terms of the relations between the Evaluation Situation and a Reference Situation, and the Reference Situation and the Discourse Situation.

"Personal experience"	RS includes ES
	RS includes DS
"Direct "	RS includes ES
	RS is accessible from DS
"Indirect"	RS is accessible from ES
	RS includes DS
"Hearsay"	RS is accessible from ES
	RS is accessible from DS

(7)

The aim of this analysis is of course very close to the one I am trying to defend here: evidentiality is analyzed in terms of more abstract features and relations that are shared with other categories. As Speas (2010) notes, the notions of Evaluation, Reference, and Discourse situation are very close to the notions Event time, Reference time and Discourse time from tense and aspect. Similarly, the inclusion and accessibility relations are very close to inclusion and precedence in tense and aspect. This closeness allows for a better understanding of the many cases in which tense and aspect morphemes are 'recycled' with evidential meanings.

However, Speas (2010) analysis also has a number of drawbacks. Just like in Reichenbachian approaches to tense and aspect, many more relations between RS, ES, and DS are possible in principle than those described in (7), and it is not clear why these are excluded or unattested. In (7), RS always enters an inclusion or accessibility relation with either DS or ES, but this asymmetry does not seem to derive from anything within the evidential system. It is also not clear whether indirect (inference) and hearsay are characterized with sufficient detail in this system. Speas (2010) states that the inference relation is characterized by an inclusion relation of DS in RS, because when making an inference, a speaker takes into account the current state of affairs. While that may be true, this inclusion does not capture the essence of what an inference is. An inference is a process of deduction on behalf of the speaker, who considers various types of contextual information to draw the conclusion that is likely that something is the case. The description of inference in terms of accessibility and inclusion does not take into

consideration that inferentials are always related to the speaker: the inference must be drawn by the speaker. Nothing in this description precludes an inferential evidential that would express an inference made by a third party, with the speaker simply reporting that this counts as the knowledge source of the statement. In other words, the description of inference in terms of accessibility and inclusion is compatible with the notion of inference, but it does not describe it precisely enough. Similarly, the description for hearsay does not include reference to the fact that the source of the hearsay always must be a third party. In other words, there are no hearsay evidentials dedicated to information provided by the hearer. Again, this does not quite follow from the description in (7).

7　Evidentiality and the proximal–distal distinction

However, I do believe that the analysis in (7) is on the right track, and rather than replace it I would like to propose an alternative perspective on the direct/ indirect evidentiality distinction that constrains Speas's (2010) approach further. My proposal will perhaps also make it easier to evaluate which criteria basic grammatical categories have to fulfill to be able to be recycled into evidential meanings.

　　I will first examine the distinction between direct and indirect evidentiality in Table 1. Direct evidentiality signals that the speaker was present at the event, since they experienced the event by seeing, hearing, or even smelling it. Indirect evidentiality, whether by hearsay or inference, signals that the speaker was not present at the event. This direct/ indirect distinction closely resembles the universally attested spatial distinction between proximate and distal, a distinction that can be observed in many grammatical categories. As is well known, the proximate–distal distinction differentiates what is spatially close to the speaker to what is further away from the speaker. The distinction also often separates the visible from the invisible. This spatial distinction appears most clearly in the opposition between the English demonstratives *this* and *here* (proximate), and *that* and *there* (distal) (Diessel 2014). Proximal and distal demonstratives are used to establish a joint focus of attention between speaker and hearer (Diessel 1999).

　　This is of course also what evidentials do: they establish a joint focus of attention between speaker and hearer on the way in which the speaker obtained the information expressed in the statement presented to the hearer. Direct evidentiality can be viewed as proximal: it indicates that the event described in the

proposition was close to the speaker, and thus sensorily accessible (e.g. visible).[7] Indirect evidentiality is distal: it indicates that the event was far away from the speaker, and sensorily inaccessible (hence often invisible). An indirect/ distal evidential thus implies that the speaker indirectly obtained information about the event. So while *this* and *that* oppose proximal and distal objects, and *here* and *there* proximal and distal locations, direct and indirect evidentials can be characterized as referring to proximal and distal events. Under this view, the linguistic representation of knowledge and truth has a spatial basis. However, this spatial nature should not be viewed in terms of physical location but in terms of how events are presented as directly (proximal) or indirectly (distal) accessible to the speaker.[8] This entails that markers for direct/ proximal evidentiality can be derived from verbs of *seeing*, since what is visible to the speaker is proximal in the relevant evidential sense.

The proximate–distal distinction is also fundamental in nonlinguistic cognitive capacities such as spatial navigation (e.g. Tommasi et al. 2012). A similar distinction is present in the two core cognitive systems for geometry distinguished by Spelke et al. (2010): a system for analyzing nearby visual forms is opposed to a system for navigating larger spaces. In other words, the way in which humans present the reliability and source of their statements may reflect a deep-seated capacity shared with cognitive systems beyond language. I believe this connection needs to be further explored to better understand the relation between intra- and extralinguistic constraints on linguistic representations. This program is in line with the 'three factors' model for language of Chomsky (2005), who proposes that the faculty of language is composed of (a) a universal blueprint for language (Universal Grammar), (b) experience and usage, and (c) general cognitive factors. The proximal–distal distinction may well be such a general cognitive factor, and the exact nature of its interaction with language remains to be investigated.

Linguistically, this approach makes strong predictions for the way in which evidentials develop diachronically across languages, and for their interaction

---

[7]There are many antecedents for the relation between direct/ indirect evidentiality and deixis. Schlichter (1986) treats the Wintu evidential system in terms of a deictic opposition between unmarked visible events versus nonvisible events. Garrett (2001) argues that the direct evidential in Tibetan is a demonstrative assertion marker. Chung (2005) refers to 'spatial deictic tense' to derive direct evidentiality.

[8]Note that even demonstratives do not always refer to deictic locations, as in expressions like *There was this man I knew*, where proximal *this* does not refer to a person who is locatively or contextually close to the Speaker.

with other categories: only grammatical categories that are compatible with a proximate–distal distinction can be recycled as direct–indirect evidentials. This strong 'recycling' hypothesis of course needs to be tested against a wide array of languages with evidential systems.

In addition to the proximal–distal dimension that translates the direct–indirect distinction in evidentiality, I would like to discuss another dimension that crosscuts the first one, and allows to describe the same four-way distinction that Speas (2010) had in mind. As mentioned before direct evidentiality can be further subdivided into situations that are only known to the speaker (something the speaker feels), and situations that are external to the speaker but directly perceived by them. Direct evidentials can be speaker-internal or speaker-external. Interestingly, Lau & Rooryck (2017) make a similar reference to the internal–external distinction in their analysis of inference and hearsay as directly related to the Aktionsart category of accomplishment. They analyze hearsay as an evidential with which the Speaker signals that the information presented in a proposition p was arrived at by a Speaker-external information update process of a source external to the speech situation informing them that p. By contrast, inferentials are minimally different from hearsay in that they refer to a Speaker-internal information update process using a variety of sources available to them. Evidentials expressing inference involve a Speaker-internal mental process of gradual 'building up' of the information that culminates in the Speaker possessing the relevant information expressed in p. With hearsay evidentials, the speaker is the recipient of external information, and is therefore positioned at the final stage of a process of transfer of information initiated by a third party. In both hearsay and inference, the speaker lacks direct access to the information.

The dimensions of proximal/ distal and Speaker-internal/ Speaker-external are sufficient to describe the same set of evidentials as those distinguished by Speas (2010), as shown in the following table:

	Proximal situation	**Distal situation**
Speaker-internal access	Personal experience	Inference
Speaker-external access	Sensory	Hearsay

(8)

Note that both of these dimensions are ultimately spatial in nature. While the proximal–distal distinction is well anchored in various other grammatical categories and processes, the nature of the Speaker-internal vs Speaker-external

distinction seems much less clearly related to existing categories, and requires more investigation. In any case, I believe that this 'spatial' analysis of the abstract features underlying evidential categories provide a concrete set of criteria that more basic categories have to comply with in order to be eligible for their 'recycling' as evidentials.

8 Extending the Speaker internal/ external distinction

The Speaker-internal/-external dimension may also allow for a new understanding of the relation of evidentiality with egophoricity and allophoricity (see Tournadré 1991, Hargreaves 2005, Widmer 2017 and references cited therein). Following Hargreaves (2005), Widmer (2017) views the egophoric/ allophoric distinction as one that distinguishes between privileged vs non-privileged access to knowledge of a situation. On the basis of data from Tibeto-Burman languages, Widmer (2017) distinguishes egophoric markers that express 'actional involvement' of the speaker from from egophoric markers that express 'epistemic involvement'. Egophoric markers expressing actional involvement mark the Speaker as a participant in a situation, while egophoric markers of epistemic involvement only indicate knowledge or experience of a situation.

This distinction is very similar to the one I made above between Speaker-internal and Speaker-external access to a situation. In other words, the actional/ epistemic involvement distinction within egophoricity looks like another recombination of more basic primitives of the grammar. The notion of 'privileged access' does not seem to involve the proximal/ distal distinction. By contrast, the allophoric (non-privileged access) system does seem to interact with evidential markers: allophoric markers can also express direct and inferential evidentiality in Bunan (Widmer 2017: table 2). In terms of the system developed in (8) above, this would mean that allophoricity does make use of the proximal/ distal distinction as applied to situations. Widmer's (2017) observations about Bunan could therefore be reinterpreted along the lines of the table in (9):

	Privileged access (egophoric)	**Non-privileged access (allophoric)**	
	situational involvement	proximal situation	distal situation
Speaker-internal access	actional involvement	Direct	Inference
Speaker-external access	epistemic involvement		

(9)

Once again, I hope to have shown that the relations between these various notions can be rethought in terms of different primitives: privileged access/ egophoricity can be viewed as a non-spatial type of access of the Speaker to a situation.

9 Quotatives and reportatives

The table in (8) refers to hearsay as a context that involves speaker-external access to a distal situation. Throughout this paper, I have used the terms hearsay and reportative interchangeably, but I have not discussed quotatives. Note however that Table 1 puts hearsay and quotative on the same level, as part of indirect evidence. In terms of the table in (8), that cannot be quite right: quotatives are markers that attribute a sentence to a different speaker, and involve quoted speech. By contrast, reportatives only indicate that the speaker was informed about the situation described in the sentence by someone else, but the speaker uses their own words to do so.[9] If quotatives do not fit in with reportatives, then where do they go in the table in (8)? I would like to propose that quotatives differ from reportatives in terms of the proximal-distal dimension. That is, quotatives are a special instance of speaker-external access to a situation that can be viewed as proximal in two ways. The Speaker not only indicates that they were present at a speech act by someone else, but they also present the quoted speech act in the (proximal) common ground between speaker and hearer. By contrast, using a hearsay/ reportative marker would indicate that the situation described in the sentence is situated outside of the proximal space between speaker and hearer: the user of a reportative marker was neither present at the situation described, nor was there necessarily a speech act involved. This analysis places quotatives and witness markers in the same box in the table: sensory evidentials only indicate that the Speaker was present at the situation (sensory/ witness), while quotatives indicate more specifically that the Speaker was present at a speech act that they reproduce in their own speech act.

The observation that quotative and reportative differ along the proximal-distal dimension can be most easily seen in direct and indirect speech in English. In (10a), direct speech can only be referred to by the proximal demonstrative

---

[9]The evidential status of reportatives and quotatives has been extensively discussed by e.g. Faller 2002, Anderbois 2014, Korotkova 2017.

this, but not by the distal demonstrative *that*. By contrast, the complementizer for indirect speech in (10b) is based on the demonstrative distal *that*, rather than on proximal *this*.

(10)   a.   Sue said (this/ *that): "It is raining."
         b.   Sue said (that/ *this) it is raining.

The relation between reportative and quotative is however not always defined along the proximal-distal dimension. In some languages, like Cuzco Quechua, there are markers that do double duty as quotatives and reportatives. Korotkova (2017) proposes to treat these as homophonous markers, but that seems unfortunate, as its treats the relation between reportative and quotative as entirely accidental. Under the analysis presented here, it is sufficient to say that the Quechua reportative/ quotative marker *–si* is underspecified for the proximal-distal distinction.

10   Conclusion

Summing up, I have called into question the status of evidentiality as an autonomous grammatical category. I propose a programmatic alternative in which evidentiality arises as a result of the recombination of abstract properties of other, more basic grammatical categories. Since such recombinations often carry the 'baggage' of the original grammatical categories, a certain overlap and vagueness in evidential meanings is to be expected, in addition to the core set of evidential meanings expressed in Table 1.

Speas (2010) was the first to propose that evidential meanings can be reduced to more abstract primitives of the grammar, even though she still grant evidentiality the status of a separate grammatical category. I have tried to complement and constrain Speas's (2010) analysis by a 'spatial' analysis of evidentiality that appeals to the dimensions of proximal/ distal and Speaker-internal/ Speaker external.

The 'recycling' perspective on evidentiality should be seen as an application of Occam's razor: an analysis that manages to derive evidentiality with a more parsimonious set of elementary categories should be viewed as superior to an analysis that needlessly adds taxonomic distinctions.

More broadly, a 'recycling' perspective on evidentiality could provide us with information on the limits and organization of the functional domain, a program

akin to that of Wiltschko (2014). If evidentiality recycles independently moti-vated, more basic categories of human language, such a result would illumi-nate our understanding of the elementary categories of language as grammat-ical tools for representing the origin and reliability of our statements. Such a program would allow us to distinguish the elementary categories of grammar from categories that are derived from these. Moreover, it would illustrate the surprisingly versatile uses to which these elementary categories can be put. This approach would afford a new window into the way in which the language faculty accommodates the diversity of the world's languages in terms of a limited set of abstract elementary categories that can be put to a variety of uses.

References

Aikhenvald, A.Y. 2004. *Evidentiality*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Aikhenvald, A.Y. 2012. The essence of mirativity. *Linguistic Typology* 16. 435–485.

Aikhenvald, A.Y. 2018. *The Oxford handbook of evidentiality*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Anderbois, S. 2014. On the exceptional status of reportative evidentials. *Semantics and Linguistic Theory* 24. 234–254.

Anderson, L.B. 1986. Evidentials, paths of change, and mental maps: Typologi-cally regular asymmetries. In W.L. Chafe & J. Nichols (eds.), *Evidentiality: The linguistic coding of epistemology*. 273–312. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.

Biberauer, T. 2017. Factors 2 and 3: A principled approach. In C. Song & J. Baker (eds.), *Cambridge occasional papers in linguistics 10*. 38–65. Cam-bridge: Cambridge University Press. `http://www.ling.cam.ac.uk/COPIL/papers/10-03-biberauer.pdf`.

Blain, E.M. & Déchaine, R.M. 2007. Evidential types: Evidence from Cree di-alects. *International Journal of American Linguistics* 73. 257–291.

Bruil, M. 2014. *Clause-typing and evidentiality in Ecuadorian Siona*: Leiden Uni-versity dissertation. `https://www.lotpublications.nl`.

Bruil, M. 2015. When evidentials are not evidentials: The case of Ecuadorian Siona. *Linguistic Typology* 19(3). 385–423.

Bybee, J.L. 1985. *Morphology: A study of the relation between meaning and form*. New York: John Benjamins.

Chomsky, N. 2005. Three factors in language design. *Linguistic Inquiry* 36(1). 1–22.

Chung, K.S. 2005. *Space in tense: The interaction of tense, aspect, evidentiality and speech act in Korean*: Simon Fraser University dissertation.

Cinque, G. 1999. *Adverbs and functional heads: A cross-linguistic perspective*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Davis, C., Potts, C. & Speas, P. 2007. Evidential marking, interrogatives, and the maxim of quality. Paper presented at the 17th Semantics and Linguistic Theory Conference (SALT 17), University of Connecticut, 11-13 May 2017.

Diessel, H. 1999. *Demonstratives. Form, function, and grammaticalization*. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Diessel, H. 2014. Demonstratives, frames of reference, and semantic universals of space. *Language and Linguistics Compass* 8(3). 116–132.

Faller, M.T. 2002. *Semantics and pragmatics of evidentials in Cuzco Quechua*: Stanford University dissertation.

Faller, M.T. 2017. Reportative evidentials and modal subordination. *Lingua* 186. 55–67.

Garrett, E. 2001. *Evidentiality and assertion in Tibetan*: UCLA dissertation.

Givón, T. 1982. Evidentiality and epistemic spaces. *Studies in Language* 6. 23–49.

de Haan, F. 1999. Evidentiality and epistemic modality: Setting boundaries. *Southwest Journal of Linguistics* 18. 83–101.

Haegeman, L. & Hill, V. 2013. The syntacticization of discourse. In R. Folli, C. Sevdali & R. Truswell (eds.), *Syntax and its limits*. 370–390. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Hardman, M.J. 1986. Data source marking in the Jaqi languages. In W.L. Chafe & J. Nichols (eds.), *Evidentiality: The linguistic coding of epistemology*. 113–136. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.

Hargreaves, D. 2005. Agency and intentional action in Kathmandu Newari. *Himalayan Linguistics Journal* 5. 1–48.

Hengeveld, K. & Olbertz, H. 2012. Didn't you know? mirativity does exist! *Linguistic Typology* 16. 487–503.

Hoff, B. 1986. Evidentiality in Carib. *Lingua* 49–103.

Korotkova, N. 2017. Evidentials and (relayed) speech acts: Hearsay as quotation. *Semantics and Linguistic Theory* 25. 676–694.

Kratzer, A. 1977. What 'must' and 'can' must and can mean. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 337–355.

Lau, M. & Rooryck, J. 2017. Aspect, evidentiality and mirativity. *Lingua* 186. 110–119.

Lazard, G. 2001. On the grammaticalization of evidentiality. *Journal of Pragmatics* 33. 358–368.

Mexas, H. 2016. Mirativity as realization marking: A cross-linguistic study. `https://www.academia.edu/30875827/Mirativity_as_realization_marking_A_cross-linguistic_study`.

Nikolaeva, I. 1999. The semantics of Northern Khanty evidentials. *Journal de la Société Finno-Ougrienne* 88. 131–159.

Rooryck, J. 2001a. Evidentiality. Part i. *GLOT International* 5. 125–133.

Rooryck, J. 2001b. Evidentiality. Part ii. *GLOT International* 5. 161–168.

Schenner, M. 2008. Double face evidentials in German: reportative 'sollen' and 'wollen' in embedded contexts. In A. Grønn (ed.), *Proceedings of Sinn und Bedeutung 12*, vol. 12. 552–566. Oslo: ILOS.

Schlichter, A. 1986. The origins and deictic nature of Wintu evidentials. In W.L. Chafe & J. Nichols (eds.), *Evidentiality: The linguistic coding of epistemology*. 46–60. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.

Speas, M. 2004a. Evidential paradigms, world variables and person agreement features. *Rivista di Linguistica* 16(1). 253–280.

Speas, M. 2004b. Evidentiality, logophoricity and the syntactic representation of pragmatic features. *Lingua* 114(3). 255–276.

Speas, M. 2008. On the syntax and semantics of evidentials. *Language and Linguistics Compass* 2(5). 940–965.

Speas, M. 2018. Evidentiality and formal semantic theories. In A.Y. Aikhenvald (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of evidentiality*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Speas, M. & Tenny, C. 2003. Configurational properties of point of view roles. In A.M. Di Sciullo (ed.), *Asymmetry in grammar*. 321–411. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Speas, P. 2010. Evidentials as generalized functional heads. In A.M. Di Sciullo & V. Hill (eds.), *Edges, heads, and projections: Interface properties*. 127–150. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Spelke, E., Lee, S.A. & Izard, V. 2010. Beyond core knowledge: Natural geometry. *Cognitive Science* 34(5). 863–884.

Tommasi, L., Chiandetti, C., Pecchia, T., Sovrano, V.A. & Vallortigara, G. 2012. From natural geometry to spatial cognition. *Neuroscience and Biobehavioral Reviews* 36(2). 799–824.

Tournadré, N. 1991. The rhetorical use of the Tibetan ergative. *Linguistics of the Tibeto-Burman Area* 14(1). 93–107.

Widmer, M. 2017. The evolution of egophoricity and evidentiality in the Himalayas: The case of Bunan. *Journal of Historical Linguistics* 7(1). 245–274.

Willett, T. 1988. A cross-lingustic survey of grammaticization of evidentiality. *Studies in Language* 12. 51–97.

Wiltschko, M. 2014. *The universal structure of categories: Towards a formal typology*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

An emerging veridical complementizer *to čto* in Russian

Alexandra Simonenko & Anastasiia Voznesenskaia

1   A new complementizer

This squib[1] explores an innovation in the complementizer system of Modern Russian: a form *to čto*. The new form is illustrated in (1), which contrasts with the standard *čto* in (2) by the presence of the *to* element.

(1)   mne govor'-at,   **to čto** eto zakrytyj jamajskij kvartal   v centre
       I.DAT say-PRS.3PL to čto this closed   Jamaican neighbourhood in centre
       "they tell me that this is a closed Jamaican neighbourhood in the center"
       Pharaoh in an interview to Yurij Dud', 5:54[2]

(2)   esli im   nrav-it-s'a,   govor'-at,   **čto** nravyts'a
       if   they.DAT please-3SG-REFL say-PRS.3PL čto please-3SG-REFL
       "if they like it, they say that they like it"   Pharaoh in an interview to Yurij Dud', 31:06

Complementizer *to čto* is string identical to a construction involving a demonstrative introducing a subordinate clause. Specifically, the new complementizer is homographous with a combination of a demonstrative pronoun *to* "that" and a standard complementizer *čto* "what", as in (3).[3]

(3)   Menya udiv-ilo   (**to**), [**čto** ey   bylo vsego dva god-a]
       I.ACC   suprise-PST.3SG that COMP she.DAT was only   two year-GEN.PL
       "I was surprised that she was only two years old." lit. "That she was only two years old surprised me."[4]

---

[1]This is a small token of deep gratitude for the inspiration Liliane gives on the academic, professional, personal, aesthetic, and joie de vivre level.

[2]`https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VXK12Uaxt9M`

[3]This also may be precisely the construction that gave rise to the new complementizer.

[4]The use of a demonstrative with free relatives in Russian is contingent on contrastive inter-

Similar constructions seem to be found in German and English, as (4) illustrates.

(4) Wir bedauern **es, dass** die Schwimmer nicht bereit sind, die
     We regret   it that the swimmers   neg   willing are   the
     konzeptionellen   Dinge mitzutragen.
     conceptual.issues share
     "We regret it that the swimmers are not willing to share the conceptual
     issues."   Schwabe (2016: 212)

In this squib we summarize what is already known about the new phenomenon
and make some novel observations based on the analysis of recent interviews
and speaker judgements. We also sketch a way to approach its analysis, argu-
ing that the new complementizer signals the truth of the embedded proposition
with respect to the beliefs of one of the speech act participants or of a third-party.

2   Not a demonstrative *to* followed by a complementizer *čto*

The distribution of *to čto* as a complementizer only begins to be studied as the
innovation seems to have emerged during the last decade. In the literature, the
claim that we are witnessing the emergence of a new complementizer was first
made by Korotaev (2016), who observed that *to* and *čto* in this case form an into-
national unity and that *to čto* can combine with a wider class of matrix predicates
than a demonstrative followed by čto.

As noticed by Korotaev (2016), another hallmark of *to čto* that sets it apart
from demonstratives with subordinate clauses is the insensitivity of *to* in *to čto*
to the selectional properties of the main predicate. While in (5), which features
a new complementizer, the form *to* stays invariable, in (6) *to* is a demonstrative
obligatorily introduced by a preposition and taking a prepositional case, as re-
quired for non-propositional arguments by the predicate *uveren* ("sure").

(5) ya uveren **to čto** Timur rukovodstvov-al-sya tvorčesk-imi
     I sure   to čto Timur direct-PST-REFL   creative-INSTR.PL

---

pretation: for a felicitous use of a demonstrative, the proposition denoted by the free relative
should be part of a set of contextually relevant alternatives (Kobozeva 2013). For instance, a nat-
ural continuation for (3) can be the following: (I was surprised that she was only two years old)
not that she could sing so well.

zadač-ami

goal-INSTR.PL

"I am sure that Timur was motivated by creative goals."   *Yuriy Dud' in an*

interview with BadComedian, 28:19[5]

(6)   Ya uveren v **tom,**   **čto**   Timur rukovodstvov-al-sya tvorčesk-imi
      I sure   in that.PREP COMP Timur direct-PST-REFL   creative-INSTR
      zadač-ami.
      goal-INSTR.PL
      "I am sure that Timur was motivated by creative goals."

We notice that the two constructions contrast with respect to a number of other properties as well. In particular, unlike the new complementizer, demonstratives introducing subordinate clauses are syntactically mobile and can occur before the main predicate, as (7) shows.

(7)   (**To,**) [**čto** ey   bylo vsego dva god-a],   menya udiv-ilo
      that COMP she.DAT was only two year-GEN.PL I.ACC suprise-PST.3SG
      "I was surprised that she was only two years old." lit. "That she was only two years old surprised me."

In contrast, the complementizer in question, just as the standard complementizer *čto*, has to be postverbal. Consider the ungrammatical (8) (cf. (1)).[6]

(8)   *** to čto** eto zakrytyj jamajskij kvartal   v centre mne govor'-at
      to čto this closed   Jamaican neighbourhood in centre I.DAT say-PRS.3PL
      Intended: "they tell me that this is a closed Jamaican neighbourhood in the center"

Another striking illustration of the complementizer function of *to čto* are cases where it appears in a clause introduced by an unrelated demonstrative pronoun, as in (9).

(9)   vse   uveren-y v **tom,**   **to čto** my pobed-im?
      everybody sure-PL   in that.PREP to čto we win-FUT.1PL
      "Is everyone sure that we are going to win?"   *From "Vozrast nesoglasiya" episode 4,*
      10:19[7]

---

[5]https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bag-O-KrswA
[6]We are very thankful to Anton Simonenko for his help with grammaticality judgements.
[7]https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=emDTVNd4e8M

3 Not an equivalent to the complementizer *čto* either

Although we fully agree with Korotaev (2016) that *to čto* should be analyzed as a complementizer, we argue that this is not a full parallel to the standard *čto*.

First, unlike *čto*, *to čto* can be used to embed partial questions, as in (10), where *to čto* combines with *počemu* "why".

(10) i   vot on vyš-el   i   mne govor-yat   **to čto počemu**
      and here it   come.out-PST.3SG and I.DAT say-PRS.3PL to čto why

      oni pohoži?
      they similar
      "and here it [the album] comes out and they tell me why are they similar?"   Pharaoh in an interview to Yuriy Dud',

      25:30

This is completely out for the standard *čto*, (11).

(11) i   vot on vyš-el   i   mne govor-yat, (***čto**) **počemu**
      and here it   come.out-PST.3SG and I.DAT say-PRS.3PL COMP why

      oni pohoži?
      they similar
      "and here it [the album] comes out and they tell me why are they similar?"

Second, not all matrix predicates that embed clauses headed by the standard *čto*, are compatible with *to čto*. For instance, *to čto* is unacceptable with *mečtat'* ("to dream"), (12), *pridumat'* "make up, invent", (13), *spasibo* "thank you (that)", (14), *orat'* ("to yell"), (15), *razočarovan* ("to be disappointed"), (16).

(12) ya konečno mečt-al,   (***to**) **čto** mama kogda-nibud' menya
      I of.course dream-PST to   čto mom   some.time   I.ACC

      voz'm-et,   otved-et   v futbol'n-uyu škol-u
      take-FUT.3SG lead-FUT.3SG in football-PREP school-PREP
      "I of course dreamt that my mom will take me to a football school". Yuriy

      Dud' in "Večerniy Urgant", 3:48[8]

_____

[8] `https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VBXGvCvECIg`. The grammaticality judgement for *to čto* is added by our consultant.

(13) Ja pridum-al **(*to) čto** u mašin-y bud-et   gibridnaya korobka.
      I invent-PST to   čto at car-ACC will-3SG hybrid   transmission
      "I made up that the car will have a hybrid transmission."

(14) spasibo tebe bol'šoe **(*to) čto** ty   ne vzj-al   menya v sportivnyj
      thank   you big   to   čto you not take-PST I.ACC   in sport
      perekur
      smoking.pause
      "A big thanks to you that you did not hire me for the "Sport break". Yuriy Dud' in "Večerniy Urgant", 14:41[9]

(15) ona ora-la   **(*to) čto** pol   tol'ko čto pokrasi-l-i.
      she yell-past to   čto floor just   paint-PST-PL
      "She yelled that the floor has just been painted."

(16) ya razočarovan **(*to) čto** lekciju otmeni-l-i
      I disappointed to   čto class   cancel-PST-PL
      "I am disappointed that the class has been cancelled."

(17) Danil požalova-l-sja   **(*to) čto** ya pro   nego zab-yl
      Danil complain-PST-REFL to   čto I   about him   forget-PST
      "Danil complained that I forgot about him."

The distribution of the two complementizers with respect to a sample of matrix predicates is summarized in table 1.

---

[9]`https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=VBXGvCvECIg`. The grammaticality judgement for *to čto* is added by my consultant.

	to čto	čto		to čto	čto
bojat'sja "to be afraid"	✓	✓	ponravit'sja "to be pleased"	✓	✓
dumat' "to think"	✓	✓	pridumat' "to invent"	✗	✓
videt' "to see"	✓	✓	rad "glad"	✓	✓
volnovat'sja "to worry"	✓	✓	razočarovan "to be disappointed"	✗	✓
govorit' "to say"	✓	✓	skazat' "to say"	✓	✓
žalet' "to be sorry"	✓	✓	sluhi "rumours"	✓	✓
znat' "to know"	✓	✓	snit'sja "to see dreams (that)"	✓	✓
kazat'sja "to seem"	✓	✓	sovrat' "to lie"	✓	✓
mečtat' "to dream"	✗	✓	soglasen "to agree"	✓	✓
orat' "to yell"	✗	✓	spasibo "thank you (that)"	✗	✓
požalovat'sya "to complain"	✗	✓	telegramma "a telegram"	✓	✓
ponimat' "to understand"	✓	✓	uveren "to be sure"	✓	✓

Table 1: Distribution of *to čto* vs. *čto*

4 A relative veridicality marker

We make the following descriptive generalizations about the use of *to čto* based on table 1. First, *to čto* is not used with predicates which do not attribute the embedded proposition to anyone's beliefs. Such are *orat'* ("to yell") and *spasibo* ("thank you that"). Second, it is not used with predicates of creation (of propositional content or possible worlds), such as *mečtat'* ("to dream") and pridumat' ("to invent"). Third, it is out with emotive predicates which appear to trigger a presupposition that the proposition denoted by the subordinate clause is part of the common ground and asserts an emotional attitude towards that proposition, such as *razočarovan* "to be disappointed" and *požalovat'sya* "to complain".

In view of these generalizations, we suggest that *čto* signals veridicality, where veridicality is understood as in (18).

(18)   A propositional operator *F* is veridical iff from the truth of *Fp* we can infer that *p* is true according to some individual *x* (i.e. in some individual *x*'s epistemic model).   Giannakidou (2009: 1889)

Specifically, we propose that *to čto* signals that the proposition denoted by the complement clause is entailed by the belief worlds of a contextually determined belief source (not necessarily identical to the agent of the main predicate). This means that its use requires that it be contextually possible that there is an epis-

temic source relative to the proposition in question. This condition is violated by predicates of mental creation, in which case propositions are "generated" by an epistemic source rather than being entailed by belief worlds. This also explains the incompatibility of *to čto* with strongly factive emotive predicates *razočarovan* "to be disappointed" and *požalovat'sya* "to complain". Factivity, understood as veridicality relative to the belief's of the speaker and the hearer at the same time, is arguably more relevant than veridicality relative to a given epistemic source. Therefore marking the latter with factive predicates is infelicitous, as its use may trigger an implicature that factivity does not hold.

In future work we hope to link these observation with the structural and semantic typology of complementizer types (Baunaz 2018) as well as to position *to čto* in a bigger picture of Russian complementizers (Hansen et al. 2016).

References

Baunaz, L. 2018. Decomposing complementizers: The fseq of French, Modern Greek, Serbo-Croatian and Bulgarian complementizers. *Exploring Nanosyntax* 149–179.

Giannakidou, A. 2009. The dependency of the subjunctive revisited: temporal semantics and polarity. *Lingua* 120. 1883–1908.

Hansen, B., Letuchiya, A. & Błaszczyk, I. 2016. Complementizers in Slavonic (Russian, Polish, and Bulgarian). *Complementizer semantics in European languages Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter* 175–223.

Kobozeva, I.M. 2013. Conditions on the use of a correlative pronoun "to" before complement clauses with "chto"-complementizer [uslovja upotreblenija "to" pered pridatochnym iz'jasnitel'nym s sojuzom "chto"]. In O. Inkova (ed.), *Du mot au texte, Études slavo-romanes*. 131–150. Bern: Peter Lang.

Korotaev, N.A. 2016. Soyuz *to čto* v ustnoy russkoy reči. Russian State University for the Humanities.

Schwabe, K. 2016. Sentential proforms and argument conditionals. *Inner-sentential propositional proforms. Syntactic properties and interpretative effects* 211–240.

Clause-initial subject doubling in Dutch dialects
(Or: Liliane was right after all)

Jeroen van Craenenbroeck & Marjo van Koppen

Abstract

This paper revisits the debate between van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2002, 2007) on the one hand and Haegeman (1990, 1992, 2004) on the other regarding the status of clause-initial subject doubling in Dutch dialects. Contrary to our earlier work, we conclude that Haegeman (2004) is right in drawing a principled distinction when it comes to this type of doubling between the dialect of Lapscheure and that of Wambeek. Stronger still, we argue that Haegeman (1990, 1992)'s original position, whereby the first subject element in clause-initial subject doubling is a clitic (rather than a weak pronoun) is indeed the correct analysis. After presenting some arguments—both old and new—in favor of this position, we conclude by considering the broader theoretical implications of this analysis.

1 Introduction: the bone of contention

This paper revolves around a particular configuration of pronominal subject doubling which is attested in various Dutch dialects.[1] It is exemplified in (1) and (2).

(1) Ze   gui zaai.
     she.DEFICIENT goes she.STRONG
     'She's going.'   Wambeek Dutch

(2) Ze   goa zie.
     she.DEFICIENT goes she.STRONG
     'She's going.'   Lapscheure Dutch

In both these examples the subject pronoun is expressed twice, but interpreted only once. As such, they represent cases of pronominal subject doubling. Two further characteristics will play a central role in the remainder of this paper. First, one instantiation of the subject is a strong pronoun (*zaai* and *zie*), while the other is deficient (*ze*). Second, these examples display what one could call clause-initial subject doubling, in that the first subject pronoun is also the first element of the clause. Subject doubling is by no means restricted to this sentence type, though: both in the dialect of Wambeek and in that of Lapscheure, subject

---

[1]It gives us great pleasure to be able to dedicate this paper to Liliane. Her contributions both to the field at large and to dialect syntax more specifically simply cannot be overstated. Without Liliane's inspiring work our own linguistic careers probably would have taken a different turn as well.

doubling also occurs in embedded clauses (the a-examples in (3) and (4)) and inverted main clauses (the b-examples in (3) and (4)).

(3) a. da se   zaai   guit.
         that she.DEFICIENT she.STRONG goes
         'that she's going.'
     b. Gui se   zaai?
         goes she.DEFICIENT she.STRONG
         'Is she going?'   Wambeek Dutch

(4) a. da se   zie   goat.
         that she.DEFICIENT she.STRONG goes
         'that she's going.'
     b. Goa se   zie?
         goes she.DEFICIENT she.STRONG
         'Is she going?'   Lapscheure Dutch

One of the main bones of contention between Haegeman (2004) (henceforth H) and van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2007) (henceforth VC&VK) concerns the question of whether (1)–(2) and (3)–(4) represent a unified phenomenon or not. VC&VK claim that they don't: while (3)–(4) are representative of a phenomenon they call clitic doubling, the doubling in (1)–(2) is of a fundamentally different nature, which they call topic doubling. H, on the other hand, contends that for the Lapscheure data, this split is uncalled for and hence that (2) and (4) represent the same type of doubling, in particular clitic doubling. Closely related to this analytical difference is the question of the pronominal status of the first subject element in (1)–(2). VC&VK argue that while clitic doubling (the examples in (3)–(4)) always involves the combination of a clitic and a strong pronoun (in the sense of Cardinaletti & Starke (1999)), topic doubling never contains a clitic. This means that the deficient pronoun at the beginning of the clause in (1)–(2) is a weak pronoun. Haegeman (1990, 1992), on the other hand, claims that the deficient pronoun in all the examples in (2) and (4) are subject clitics. The only difference is that while in (4) the clitic cliticizes onto C in narrow syntax, in (2) it does so at PF.[2] A central argument in this debate comes from examples like (5) (van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen 2007:157).

(5) a. { We   / * Me   } komme waaile   mergen.
          we.WEAK   we.CLITIC   come   we.STRONG tomorrow
         'We are coming tomorrow.'
     b. da { * we   / me   } waaile   mergen   kommen.
         that   we.WEAK   we.CLITIC we.STRONG tomorrow come
         'that we are coming tomorrow.'

---

[2] The reason for this difference is the Verb Second requirement, which regulates that specCP should be filled in a declarative main clause in Dutch (dialects), so the clitic can only move to C at PF, after it has satisfied V2 at Spell-Out. Haegeman (2004:132–133) reinterprets this difference as a difference in pronominal status: *ze* is a clitic in (4), but a weak pronoun in (2). As van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2007:157) point out, however, this claim risks undermining the unified account of clitic doubling in (2) and (4). Moreover, given that we will argue that *ze* is in fact a clitic in both (2) and (4), we will stick with Haegeman (1990, 1992)'s original analysis in the remainder of the paper and not follow Haegeman (2004)'s reinterpretation.

    c.   Mergen   komme { * we   / me   } waaile.
        tomorrow come   we.WEAK we.CLITIC we.STRONG
        'Tomorrow we are coming.'   Wambeek Dutch

In the first person plural the dialect of Wambeek makes a morphological distinction between its clitic and its weak pronoun, and as the examples in (5) make clear, it is the clitic pronoun that shows up in embedded clauses and inverted main clauses (clitic doubling contexts according to VC&VK), whereas the weak pronoun appears in subject-initial main clauses (topic doubling). According to VC&VK, exactly the same distribution underlies the examples in (1)–(4), save for the fact that the deficient form *ze* is homophonous between a clitic and a weak pronoun. In a sense, then, those examples are less informative that the ones in (5). H, on the other hand, contends that within Lapscheure (where no minimal pairs like the ones in (5) can be constructed) there is no evidence in favor of a different status of *ze* and so the conclusion drawn on the Wambeek data does not carry over to Lapscheure.

    In this paper we revisit this debate, and conclude, contrary to our earlier work, that Haegeman (1990, 1992, 2004) is right, and that the type of doubling illustrated in (2) is of a fundamentally different nature than the one in (1): while the latter is a case of topic doubling, the former represents clitic doubling, exactly like the examples in (3)–(4).[3] In support of this position, we present four arguments, which we lay out in detail in the next section.

2   Arguments for a clitic doubling analysis

2.1   Introduction

In this section we present four arguments in favor of the hypothesis outlined in the previous section. Some of these arguments are known from the literature (though not always explicitly acknowledged as such), others are new.

2.2   Coordination

As pointed out by (Cardinaletti & Starke 1999:169), weak pronouns differ from clitics in that the former can but the latter cannot be a shared subject of a predicate coordination. If the two dialects under consideration here differ in the pronominal status of clause-initial deficient pronouns, we expect that difference to be manifested there as well. As the examples in (6) (van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen 2000:12) and (7) show, this expectation is borne out.

(6)   *'k   Spelen op de piano en zingen altijd   geweldig.
        I.DEFICIENT play   on the piano and sing   always great
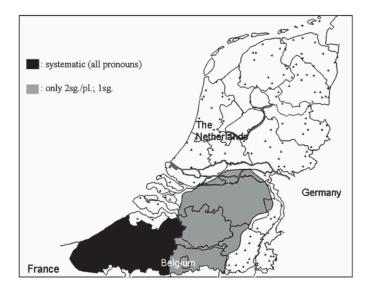   INTENDED: 'I play the piano and always sing wonderfully.'   Lapscheure Dutch

---

[3]Fortunately, we have not always been wrong-headed: in van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2000:40) we conclude, partly based on data from the Lapscheure dialect, "that West Flemish does not have [topic] doubling". We should have stuck to that initial position.

(7)   'k   Guin nuir ojs   en zeg em wa   da 'k erva   paus.
       I.DEFICIENT go   to   home and tell him what that I   there.of think
       'I'm going home and will tell him what I think.'   Wambeek Dutch

While in Lapscheure Dutch the deficient pronoun *'k* cannot occur as the shared subject of a predicate coordination, its identically sounding counterpart in the Wambeek dialect can. This suggest that there is a difference in pronominal status between these two elements: *'k* is a clitic in (6), but a weak pronoun in (7). This is consistent with a clitic doubling analysis of (2) and a topic doubling analysis of (1).

2.3   Geographical distribution

A second way to distinguish clitic doubling from topic doubling concerns their geographical distribution. As discussed in detail by de Vogelaer & Devos (2008), clitic doubling and topic doubling are typically found in different geographical areas. First consider the map they provide of clitic doubling:

Figure 1: Geographical distribution of clitic doubling (de Vogelaer & Devos 2008:256)

There is a core clitic doubling area, which consists of the provinces of French Flanders, West Flanders, and East Flanders. In addition, there appear to be remnants of a clitic doubling system, where we find what looks like first and second person doubled pronouns. Following Pauwels (1958), Nuyts (1995), de Schutter (1994) and de Vogelaer (2005), we assume that these are not actual cases of (clitic) doubling, but that they involve reanalysis of originally clitic doubled forms as non-doubled, positionally restricted strong pronouns. As such, we will not discuss these forms any further in the rest of the paper.

The distribution of topic doubling can be represented as follows:

Topic doubling is concentrated in the provinces of Flemish Brabant and Antwerp, with extensions into the northeast of East Flanders. When comparing Figure 1 with Figure 2,
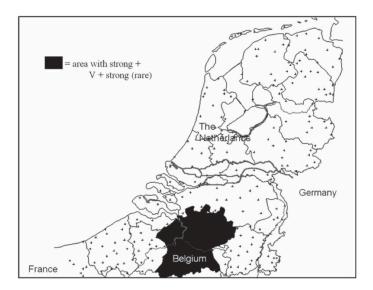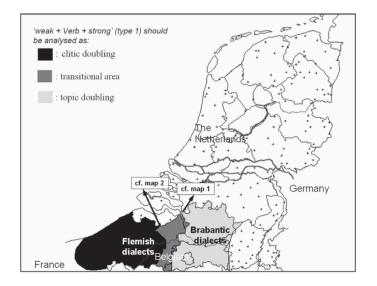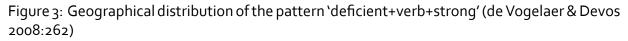
Figure 2: Geographical distribution of topic doubling (de Vogelaer & Devos 2008:257)

it becomes clear that the geographical distribution of clitic doubling and topic doubling is quite distinct—nearly complementary even. This means that we can use the distribution of the phenomena to shed light on the status of the examples in (1)–(2): if they pattern as in Figure 1, we are led to an analysis in terms of clitic doubling, while if they show the distribution in Figure 2, we are dealing with topic doubling. Interestingly, de Vogelaer & Devos (2008) do precisely this. Their findings, as well as their interpretation of these findings, can be found in Figure 3.

Figure 3: Geographical distribution of the pattern 'deficient+verb+strong' (de Vogelaer & Devos 2008:262)

The combination of a deficient pronoun followed by the finite verb followed by a strong pronoun occurs in a geographical area that includes both the clitic doubling area in Figure 1 and the topic doubling area in Figure 2. When faced with this distribution, de Vogelaer & Devos (2008:262) conclude that "a non-uniform analysis may actually provide a better understanding of the data". In other words, the pattern 'deficient pronoun + finite verb + strong pronoun' should be analyzed as clitic doubling in the area marked in black in Figure 3 and as topic doubling in the area marked in grey. Given that Lapscheure belongs to the black area and Wambeek to the grey one, these findings support the hypothesis that the examples in (1)–(2) should receive a non-uniform analysis.

2.4 Tripling

If the Lapscheure data in (2) and (4) both represent clitic doubling, then this dialect has only one mechanism for doubling a subject.[4] Wambeek Dutch, on the other hand, has two such mechanisms: topic doubling in (1) and clitic doubling in (3). This opens up the possibility of these two mechanisms co-occurring in a single sentence. Specifically, while the clause-initial subject is doubled by a strong pronoun (topic doubling), that strong pronoun could in turn be doubled by a clitic (clitic doubling), thus leading to a three-fold instantiation of the subject, or tripling. As pointed out by (Haegeman 1992:66) and shown in (8), tripling is disallowed in the dialect of Lapscheure. In Wambeek Dutch, on the other hand, tripling is fine (see (9)).

(8) *Ze   goa ze   zie.
     she.DEFICIENT goes she.CLITIC she.STRONG
     INTENDED: 'She's going.'   Lapscheure

(9) Ze   gui ze   zaai.
     she.DEFICIENT goes she.CLITIC she.STRONG
     'She's going.'   Wambeek

The contrast between these two examples suggests that while Wambeek Dutch has two doubling mechanisms at its disposal and hence allows for their co-occurrence, Lapscheure Dutch only has one. In van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2006) we explore this contrast for a slightly larger number of dialects and arrive at the same conclusion. The dialects under investigation there are represented in Figure 4.

The group of dialects uninspiredly referred to as "A-dialects" in Figure 4 are like Lapscheure Dutch in that they disallow pronominal tripling, while the so-called "B-dialects" are like that of Wambeek in allowing the subject to be doubled twice within one sentence. Like the map in Figure 3, then, these facts suggest that the contrast between Lapscheure and Wambeek under investigation in this paper is part of a larger generalization, whereby (roughly) the provinces of French Flanders, West Flanders, and East Flanders behave like Lapscheure Dutch in disallowing topic doubling, while Flemish Brabant and Antwerp are like Wambeek Dutch in having this construction.

---

[4]We're abstracting away from so-called topic marking here, as this is not really a doubling phenomenon. See van Craenenbroeck & Haegeman (2007), de Vogelaer & Devos (2008), and Haegeman (2008) for discussion.

Figure 4: Two dialect groups according to van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2006)

2.5 Meaning differences

Van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2002) coined the term 'topic doubling' for the example in (1) (and—wrongly—also for the one in (2)) to highlight the fact that the first subject element occupies a position in the CP-domain, a region typically associated with information-structural effects. One of the examples they present in support of this position is the minimal pair in (10) (van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen 2002:295).

(10)   a.   Een vrou   komt   a kaffee binn.
             a   woman comes a bar   in
             'A woman enters a bar.'
        b.   Een vrou   komt   zaai   a kaffee binn.
             a   woman comes she.STRONG a bar   in
             'Women usually enter a bar.'
             #'A woman enters a bar.'   Wambeek Dutch

In (10a) the indefinite subject is not doubled and a non-specific indefinite reading is possible, while in (10b) this reading is absent and only a generic interpretation is available. This shows that topic doubled subjects behave like topicalized constituents: both are incompatible with a non-specific indefinite reading.

    If the Lapscheure example in (2) represents a case of clitic doubling, not topic doubling, we expect this type of doubling not to be sensitive to information-structural considerations. As far as we know, this has not been looked into in any detail for the Lapscheure dialect (though see Haegeman (1990:335n2) and (Haegeman 2004:127) for occasional remarks about the meaning of this type of doulbling), but Uittenhove (2015) examines pre-

cisely this issue for the closely related dialect of Bredene.[5] Through an extensive questionnaire, he examines whether information-structure has an effect on the use of subject doubling in the dialect of Bredene. He distinguishes between four contexts—new information focus, givenness topic, contrastive focus, and contrastive topic–and examines to what extent these contexts favor subject doubling. The main finding of his research is quite unequivocal: "De zwak-sterkverdubbeling (..) wordt in alle contexten aanvaard. Zowel als focus als als topic krijgt de zwak-sterkverdubbeling van het subject hoge scores"[6] (Uittenhove 2015:68). This is exactly what we would expect in the context of this paper: if West Flemish lacks topic doubling altogether, then there should be no interaction between subject doubling—i.e. clitic doubling—and the information-structural properties of the subject.

2.6   Conclusion

We have just reviewed four pieces of evidence that all point to the same conclusion: the data in (1) and (2) should not be given a unified account. More specifically, while in Wambeek Dutch topic doubling as in (1) contrasts with the clitic doubling examples in (3), the Lapscheure data in (2) and (4) seem to uniformly point towards a clitic doubling analysis. In addition, we have also shown that there are reasons to think that this interdialectal difference is symptomatic of a larger split, which (roughly) contrasts the Flemish dialects with the Brabantic ones.

3   Conclusion and broader implications

The one-sentence summary of this paper is clear and easy: we were wrong and Liliane was right in the analysis of the Lapscheure data in (2). More generally, it looks like topic doubling, while a real phenomenon, does not extend all the way into the Flemish dialects, but is stopped in its tracks at the Flemish-Brabantic border. The broader implications of this regional divide are, we believe, well worth exploring (see van Craenenbroeck & van Koppen (2016) for relevant discussion).

   Another consequence of the proposal developed here relates to Haegeman (1990)'s original analysis of subject doubling in Lapscheure Dutch. Recall from footnote 2 above that the analysis of an example like (2) differed from those in (4) in that the clitic only cliticized to C at PF. The reason for this difference was the V2-requirement of Lapscheure Dutch: the preverbal position has to be filled by an XP at the point of spell-out. However, if we are right that the preverbal subject element in (2) is a true clitic, then the preverbal position is occupied by a head, not an XP in this example. The key to understanding this conclusion, we believe, lies in Jouitteau (2010)'s reclassification of V2-, SVO- and VSO-languages into one single category of X(P)-VSO. The V2-constraint—however implemented and probably more aptly called the X(P)-VSO-constraint—prohibits the finite verb

---

[5]Both the Lapscheure dialect and the Bredene one are part of so-called coastal West Flemish, see Taeldeman (2013).

[6]"Deficient-strong subject doubling is accepted in all contexts. Both as focus and as topic this type of doubling receives high acceptability ratings."

from being leftmost in the clausal phase (Jouitteau 2011:10), and one of the ways in which this constraint can be respected is by merging a head to the left of the finite verb. Lapscheure Dutch can do this in a context like (2), but Wambeek Dutch cannot. While this distinction might seem far-fetched or arbitrary at first, van Craenenbroeck (2011) argues that there is another context in which the clause-initial position is occupied by a head in Lapscheure Dutch, namely in expletive constructions (see Haegeman (1986), Grange & Haegeman (1989) for extensive discussion):

(11)   T   zyn gisteren   drie   studenten gekommen.
        EXPL are yesterday three students   come
        'Three students came yesterday.'   Lapscheure Dutch

Van Craenenbroeck (2011) argues that the expletive element *t* should not be analyzed as a reduced form of the third person neuter personal pronoun *het* 'it', but rather as a West Flemish analogue to Welsh or Breton clause-initial particles, with which they share many morphosyntactic properties (Jouitteau 2008, 2010, 2011, Borsley et al. 2007, Willis 1998, 2007). Viewed from this perspective, both the expletive example in (11) and the clitic doubling example in (2) are representative of the X-VSO-nature of Lapscheure Dutch. Working out this connection in more detail is a topic for further research, though.

References

Borsley, R.D., Tallerman, M. & Willis, D. 2007. *The syntax of Welsh*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Cardinaletti, A. & Starke, M. 1999. The typology of structural deficiency: a case study of three classes of pronouns. In H. van Riemsdijk (ed.), *Clitics in the languages of Europe*. 145–233. Berlin: Mouton.

van Craenenbroeck, J. 2011. Germanic expletives revisited. In pursuit of Kayne's dream. Handout for an invited talk at the 26th Comparative Germanic Syntax Workshop.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & Haegeman, L. 2007. The derivation of subject-initial V2. *Linguistic Inquiry* 38(1). 167–178.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & van Koppen, M. 2000. On the pronominal system of Dutch dialects. Unpublished ms. University of Leiden.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & van Koppen, M. 2002. Pronominal doubling and the structure of the left periphery in southern Dutch. In S. Barbiers, L. Cornips & S.v.d. Kleij (eds.), *Syntactic microvariation*. http://www.meertens.knaw.nl/books/synmic/.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & van Koppen, M. 2006. Clitic doubling and coordination. Towards a micro-typology of pronominal doubling in Dutch dialects. Handout of a talk presented at the Workshop *Syntactic Doubling in Dutch Dialects*.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & van Koppen, M. 2007. Theorie, empirie en subjectverdubbeling: een antwoord op Haegeman (2004). *Taal & Tongval* 59. 149–171.

van Craenenbroeck, J. & van Koppen, M. 2016. Microvariation and parameter hierarchies. Handout of a talk presented at CGSW 31, December 1-2, 2016. Stellenbosch University, South Africa.

Grange, C. & Haegeman, L. 1989. Subordinate clauses: adjuncts or arguments: the status of *het* in Dutch. In D. Jaspers, W. Klooster, Y. Putseys & P. Seuren (eds.), *Sentential complementation and the lexicon. studies in honour of wim de geest*. 155–171. Dordrecht: Foris publications.

Haegeman, L. 1986. *Er*-sentences in West-Flemish. Ms. Université de Genève.

Haegeman, L. 1990. Subject pronouns and subject clitics in West Flemish. *The Linguistic Review* 7. 333–363.

Haegeman, L. 1992. *Theory and description in generative syntax*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Haegeman, L. 2004. Verdubbeling van subjectpronomina in de Zuid-Nederlandse dialecten: een reactie uit Lapscheure. *Taal & Tongval* 56. 119–159.

Haegeman, L. 2008. Pleonastic *tet* in West Flemish and the cartography of subject positions. In S. Barbiers, O. Koeneman, M. Lekakou & M. van der Ham (eds.), *Microvariation in syntactic doubling*, vol. 36 Syntax and Semantics. 277–300. Bingley: Emerald.

Jouitteau, M. 2008. The brythonic reconciliation: from verb-first to generalized verb-second. In J.v. Craenenbroeck & J. Rooryck (eds.), *Linguistic Variation Yearbook*, vol. 7. Amsterdam: John Benjamins Publishing Company.

Jouitteau, M. 2011. Epp inquiries: the Late Expletive Insertion Trigger. Ms. CNRS UMR 7110.

Jouitteau, M. 2010. *La syntaxe comparée du Breton. Une enquête sur la périphérie gauche de la phrase bretonne*. Sarrebruck: Éditions universitaires européennes.

Nuyts, J. 1995. Subjectspronomina en dubbele pronominale constructies in het Antwerps. *Taal & Tongval* 47. 43–58.

Pauwels, J. 1958. *Dialect van Aarschot en omstreken*. Belgisch Interuniversitair Centrum voor Neederlandistiek.

de Schutter, G. 1994. Voegwoordflectie en pronominale clitisering: waarin Vlaams en Brabants bijna elkaars tegengestelden zijn. *Taal & Tongval* 46. 108–131.

Taeldeman, J. 2013. The southwestern dialect area: phonology. In F. Hinskens & J. Taeldeman (eds.), *Language and Space. An International Handbook of Linguistic Variation. Volume 3: Dutch*. 150–173. Berlin/Boston: Mouton de Gruyter.

Uittenhove, T. 2015. *De relatie tussen subjectsverdubbeling en informatiestructuur. Een casestudy van het Bredens*: KU Leuven MA thesis.

de Vogelaer, G. 2005. *Subjectsmarkering in de Nederlandse en Friese dialecten*: Ghent University dissertation.

de Vogelaer, G. & Devos, M. 2008. On geographical adequacy, or: how many types of subject doubling in Dutch. In S. Barbiers, O. Koeneman, M. Lekakou & M. van der Ham (eds.), *Microvariation in syntactic doubling*, vol. 36 Syntax and Semantics. 251–276. Bingley: Emerald.

Willis, D. 1998. *Syntactic change in Welsh*. Oxford: Clarendon Press.

Willis, D. 2007. Specifier-to-head reanalysis in the complementizer domain: evidence from Welsh. *Transactions of the Philological Society* 105. 432–480.

Here, there, and (every)where

Guido Vanden Wyngaerd

1   Introduction

The words *here, there*, and *(every)where* (henceforth HTW) are traditionally taken to be adverbs. Evidence discussed in Burton-Roberts (1991), however, shows that they behave distributionally like PPs. For reasons of space, I do not recapitulate this evidence here, but summarise it schematically in (1):

(1)

	Adv	PP	HTW
complement of V	✗	✓	✓
modify Adj/Adv	✓	✗	✗
postmodify N	✗	✓	✓
complement of P	✗	✓	✓
take PP complement	✗	✓	✓
take *right, straight, just*	✗	✓	✓
locative inversion	✗	✓	✓

Burton-Roberts (1991: 171) concludes from these data that HTW are prepositions. In terms of their meaning, however, HTW do not just correspond to simple prepositions, but are richer semantically. This is seen in the analysis of Katz & Postal (1964), who argue that HTW derive from an underlying PP-like structure:[1]

(2)   here   :   at this place
       there   :   at that place
       where   :   at what place

---

[1]See also Kayne (2005), who argues that *here* and *there* are licensed in a structure with silent nouns (THIS *here* PLACE, THAT *there* PLACE). The list in (2) may be extended with complex expressions like *everywhere* and *somewhere*, as well as other expressions of direction and/or location, like *back, away, home, upstairs, downstairs, abroad, aboard, apart, aside, together*, which behave like HTW. I shall not further discuss those here, however.

Aarts (2013) takes HTW to be PPs, which is more in line with their semantics. The conclusion that HTW are PPS is still too general, however: HTW correspond with a subclass of the PPs, namely those with a locative or directional meaning. The locative meaning in particular appears from the fact that some of the environments in (2) require a locative PP, such as the complement of *go* or *put*, or the phenomenon of locative inversion.

The conclusion that what look like single words in fact correspond to complex structures, viz. PPs of the type in (2), provides an interesting case for the nanosyntactic mechanism of phrasal spellout, by which a syntactically complex constituent can be spelled out by a single lexical item. At the same time, there is also some evidence for decomposing HTW. Again looking at both the forms and the meanings in (2), we see that there is also a deictic (*this/that*) or a *wh*-element (*what*) present. This element is responsible for the semantic differences between *here* (deictic proximate), *there* (deictic distal), and *where* (interrogative, or indefinite in complex forms like *somewhere, everywhere*; see Haida 2007). The forms also suggest a decomposition of the type *{h/th/wh}-ere*, with on the one hand an exponent *h-/th-/wh-*, which is responsible for the deictic/wh part of their meaning, and an exponent *-ere* on the other, which spells out a different set of features relating to location and direction. The spatial triplet *h-ere/th-ere/wh-ere* has a temporal cognate in the triplet *now/th-en/wh-en*, which (except for *now*) is subject to a similar decomposition, with the second part (*-en*) referring to time rather than to location/direction. In this short paper, I focus on the second part of HTW (*-ere*), which for convenience I continue to refer to as HTW. I argue that *-ere* realises the locative/directional part of the meaning of *here, there*, and *where*. I defer a further discussion of *h-/th-/wh-* to another place and time.

2   Movement, Direction and Location

Before proceeding with the analysis of HTW, I need to discuss prepositional expressions of location and direction. Certain types of P only have a locative meaning (e.g. *in*), while others are directional (e.g. *to*). The difference shows up most clearly in stative predications, such as postnominally or with *be* (Déchaine et al. 1995):

(3)   a.   a train in$_{LOC}$/to$_{DIR}$ Paris
      b.   This train is in$_{LOC}$/to$_{DIR}$ Paris.

French *à* 'at' only has a locative sense:

(4) a. un train à$_{\text{LOC/*DIR}}$ Paris
     b. Ce train est à$_{\text{LOC/*DIR}}$ Paris.

Numerous authors have argued that directions are more complex than locations (Koopman 2000, Van Riemsdijk & Huybregts 2002, Kracht 2002, Zwarts 2005, Den Dikken 2010, Cinque 2010, Svenonius 2010, Caha 2010, Pantcheva 2011). Taking DIR and LOC to stand in a containment relation (with DIR containing LOC), the difference between locative *in* and directional *to* can be conceived of as a difference in size, as shown in (5):

(5)

DIR	LOC	PLACE
	in	Paris
to		Paris

This approach allows an account of the otherwise surprising fact that, combined with certain types of motion verbs, both English *in* and French *à* seem to express direction:

(6) a. She went/came/fell/jumped/flew in the water.
     b. Ce train va   à Paris.
         this train goes at Paris
         'This train goes to Paris.'

This fact can be explained by assuming that the DIR element can be realised by a motion verb (Fábregas 2007, Caha 2010), allowing a locative preposition to spell-out the remainder of the functional sequence. This is shown schematically in (7):

(7)

	DIR	LOC	PLACE
be		in	Paris
go		in	the water
aller		à	Paris

Not all motion verbs are able to spell out DIR: English *walk, run* or *dance*, when combined with *in*, only have a locative, and no directional, sense, because neither the verb nor *in* can realise DIR. A directional preposition like *to* is needed, as shown in (8) and (9).

(8) She walked/ran in$_{\text{LOC}}$/to$_{\text{DIR}}$ the park.

(9)

	DIR	LOC	PLACE
run		in	Paris
run	to		Paris

Following Levin et al. (2009), I call verbs like *go/fall/jump* verbs of directed motion (or directional verbs for short), and verbs like *walk/run/dance* manner of motion verbs (see also Talmy 1975, 1985 on path-framed vs satellite-framed languages).

3 Analysis

With this in mind, let us return to HTW. This section aims at demonstrating that English HTW can occur in all the slots where locative and directional PPs can occur. This distributional pattern is accounted for by assuming that HTW are the phrasal spellout of a constituent corresponding to a locative/directional PP.

The locative sense of HTW appears in stative predications like (10a) and (10b), and it also appears in sentences where HTW combine with directional verbs, like (10c). Under the analysis developed in the previous section, DIR is realised by the verb in such a case. As a result, HTW shrink to realising only LOC, in spite of the directional sense expressed by (10c). This is shown schematically in (11).

(10) a. The pharmacy is there.
     b. They live here.
     c. She came here first and then went there.

(11)

	DIR	LOC	PLACE
be		in	Paris
be		there	
go		there	

The directional sense of HTW becomes apparent from (12), with manner of motion verbs.

(12)   She walked/ran there$_{LOC/DIR}$.

This sentence is in fact ambiguous, in a manner which is reminiscent of (8) above: there, with DIR left unexpressed and LOC expressed by *in*, the sense was locative, but with DIR+LOC realised by the preposition *to*, the meaning was directional. In this case, the ambiguity of (12) suggests that there is a syncretism between directional and locative HTW. In line with our earlier assumptions, we assume

283

that directional HTW spell out a larger constituent than locative HTW, as shown in (13):

(13)

	DIR	LOC	PLACE
walk		there	
walk	there		

Standard Superset Principle logic accounts for this syncretism: the lexical entry for HTW contains the features DIR+LOC+PLACE, and given that there is no competing lexical item that just spells out LOC+PLACE, the larger lexical item may spell out the smaller syntactic structure that is contained in its lexical entry. Finally, observe that in addition to the features DIR and LOC, HTW also spell out an abstract noun meaning PLACE. In this respect, HTW differ from *now/then/when*, which realise an abstract noun TIME.

4 Conclusion

I have argued that HTW are not adverbs, nor prepositions, nor PPs, but are decomposable into a deictic/wh part *h-/th-/wh-* and a locative/directional part *-ere*. The *-ere* part is the phrasal spellout of an abstract set of features expressing direction and location, and the abstract noun PLACE. How the two parts of HTW and their corresponding feature sets connect with each other is a matter which I hope to return to in future work.

References

Aarts, B. 2013. *English syntax and argumentation*. Basingstoke: Palgrave Macmillan.

Burton-Roberts, N. 1991. Prepositions, adverbs, and adverbials. In I.T.B. van Ostade & J. Frankis (eds.), *Language: Usage and description*. 159–172. Amsterdam: Rodopi.

Caha, P. 2010. The German locative-directional alternation: A peeling account. *The Journal of Comparative Germanic Linguistics* 13(3). 179–223.

Cinque, G. 2010. Mapping spatial PPs: an introduction. In G. Cinque & L. Rizzi (eds.), *Mapping spatial PPs* (The cartography of syntactic structures 6). 3– 25. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Déchaine, R.M., Hoekstra, T. & Rooryck, J. 1995. Augmented and non-augmented HAVE. In L. Nash & G. Tsoulas (eds.), *Proceedings of langues et grammaire I*. 85–101. Paris: Université de Paris VIII.

Den Dikken, M. 2010. On the functional structure of directional and locative PPs. In G. Cinque & L. Rizzi (eds.), *Mapping spatial PPs* (The cartography of syntactic structures 6). 74–126. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Fábregas, A. 2007. An exhaustive lexicalisation account of directional complements. In M. Bašić, M. Pantcheva, M. Son & P. Svenonius (eds.), *Nordlyd, special issue on space, motion, and result* (Tromsø Working Papers on Language and Linguistics 34.2). 165–199. Tromsø: CASTL, University of Tromsø.

Haida, A. 2007. *The indefiniteness and focusing of wh-words*. Berlin: Humboldt-Universität dissertation.

Katz, J. & Postal, P. 1964. *An integrated theory of linguistic descriptions*. Cambridge, Massachusetts: MIT Press.

Kayne, R. 2005. Here and there. In *Movement and silence*. 65–84. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Koopman, H. 2000. Prepositions, postpositions, circumpositions, and particles. In *The syntax of specifiers and heads*. 204–260. London: Routledge.

Kracht, M. 2002. On the semantics of locatives. *Linguistics and Philosophy* 25. 157–232.

Levin, B., Beavers, J. & Tham, S.W. 2009. Manner of motion roots across languages: Same or different? Paper presented at Roots Workshop, Stuttgart.

Pantcheva, M. 2011. *Decomposing path: The nanosyntax of directional expressions*. Tromsø: University of Tromsø dissertation.

Svenonius, P. 2010. Spatial P in English. In G. Cinque & L. Rizzi (eds.), *Mapping spatial PPs* (The cartography of syntactic structures 6). 127–160. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Talmy, L. 1975. Semantics and syntax of motion. In J. Kimball (ed.), *Syntax and semantics*, vol. 4. 181–238. Academic Press.

Talmy, L. 1985. Lexicalization patterns: Semantic structure in lexical forms. In T. Shopen (ed.), *Grammatical categories and the lexicon*, vol. 3 Language Typology and Syntactic Description. 57–149. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Van Riemsdijk, H. & Huybregts, R. 2002. Location and locality. In M. van Oostendorp & E. Anagnostopoulou (eds.), *Progress in grammar: Articles at the 20th anniversary of the comparison of grammatical models group in Tilburg*. 1–23. Amsterdam: Meertens Instituut.

Zwarts, J. 2005. The case of prepositions: Government and compositionality in German PPs. Paper presented at IATL 21, Haifa.

Grammaticalisation processes in Flemish Sign Language

Mieke Van Herreweghe

Following Hopper & Traugott (2003 [1993]: 232), grammaticalisation can be defined as "the change whereby lexical items and constructions come in certain linguistic contexts to serve grammatical functions and, once grammaticalized, continue to develop new grammatical functions." Grammaticalisation processes have not been studied very extensively in sign languages yet. Pfau & Steinbach (2006) give a very interesting survey of studies that have focused on grammaticalisation processes in sign languages, but Flemish Sign Language (VGT) was not one of them. Within the Deaf community in Flanders about 5000 - 6000 people (Loots et al. 2003) claim to have Flemish Sign Language as their first or principal language. After lengthy negotiations, VGT was officially recognized by the Flemish Parliament in April 2006. VGT clearly is a fully-fledged sign language in its own right, and is genealogically related to amongst others French-Belgian Sign Language (LSBF), French Sign Language (LSF), American Sign Language (ASL) and Sign Language of the Netherlands (NGT). The common ancestor of these daughter sign languages is Old French Sign Language (OFSL). However, it is impossible to use historical data to look at grammaticalisation paths since there simply are very few historical grammatical data as OFSL was never written down. Consequently, the method to be used is that of internal reconstruction which is a procedure for inferring part of the history of a language from material available for a synchronic description of the language on the basis of paradigmatic allomorphy.

1   Grammaticalisation clines

For spoken languages, grammaticalisation processes have been described along a number of structural changes or clines. The following examples will show that these clines can be found in VGT as well.

1.1 Morpho-syntactic fusion

According to Bybee (1985) morphosyntactic fusion treats the relationship between syntax (or sentence structure) and morphology (or internal word structure) or to put it in Givón's (1971: 413) terms "Today's morphology is yesterday's syntax". Pfau & Steinbach (2006: 87) state that "sign languages only have very few (if any) instances of type 2-grammaticalization (i.e. from free to bound grammatical morpheme)". I would like to argue that at least one example can be found in VGT (and probably also in other sign languages) with respect to negative affixation. Clearly, certain negative verb signs in VGT have developed from a combination of a positive sign and the negative adverb NOT (see Figure 1) resulting in a positive verb stem followed by a negative affix which consists of a twisting movement of the wrist.

Figure 1: Negative adverb NOT (with a left to right horizontal sweeping movement) (picture taken from Van Herreweghe & Vermeerbergen 2006: 245)

Examples are for instance the verb signs BELIEVE-NOT, WANT-NOT (see Figure 9), CAN-NOT (see Figure 10) and the deverbal adjective sign UNKNOWN which is the same as the noun STRANGER (see Figure 2).

Figure 2: UNKNOWN or STRANGER (`http://gebaren.ugent.be/alfabet.php?id=23011`)

1.2   Decategorialisation

Decategorialisation refers to the evolution of open class lexemes in a primary or major category to closed class lexemes in a secondary or minor category. As has been described for other sign languages VGT also has instances of the evolution of the gesture for "strong" being lexicalised into the (ad)nominal sign STRONG/ POWER (with an upward movement) and then grammaticalised into the modal verb CAN (with a downward movement).

Figure 3: STRONG/POWER (`http://gebaren.ugent.be/alfabet.php?id=18674`)

Figure 4: CAN (`http://gebaren.ugent.be/alfabet.php?id=22028`)

Since a similar path has been described for ASL (Janzen & Shaffer 2002) and other OFSL related sign languages (Wilcox 2004) the assumption can be that at least the lexicalisation but maybe also the grammaticalisation already took place in OFSL. Another example of decategorialisation in VGT is the evolution of the adjectival/adverbial sign READY into an aspectual marker READY, quite similar to what has been described for FINISH in ASL (Janzen 1995).
Furthermore it would appear that the subordinating conjunction BECAUSE has developed from the nominal sign REASON, which may be similar to its NGT counterpart (Pfau & Steinbach 2006: 40).

However, in VGT the following paths can be discerned which have not (yet) been described for other sign languages:

- lexical verb GIVE → light verb GIVE → auxiliary/preposition GIVE functioning as recipient marker (see below)
- nominal sign EXAMPLE → conjunction introducing a conditional clause

Figure 5: READY (`http://gebaren.ugent.be/alfabet.php?id=22239`)

- verb sign "*get the door slammed in one's face*" → conjunction introducing an adversative clause (Huys 2008: 94–97)

Figure 6: *get the door slammed in one's face* (picture taken from Huys 2008: 94)

1.3 Phonological reduction

The grammaticalised element is frequently phonologically reduced compared to its non-grammaticalised counterpart. For VGT we can find phonological reduction in for instance the negative affixation mentioned above. Another example is the sign GIVE which in its full lexical verb form is signed with a horizontal movement from the agent to the recipient. It is usually (but not compulsory) formed with spatial agreement, i.e. the movement of the sign starts at the locus of the agent and ends at the locus of the recipient.

In its reduced form, when used as a preposition functioning as recipient marker (see below), it is formed with a short horizontal forward wrist-flipping movement starting from the signer without any spatial agreement.
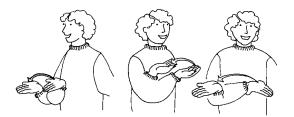
Figure 7: GIVE (in its citation form) - $_2$GIVE$_3$ (= *you give me*) - $_{3l}$GIVE$_{3r}$ (= s/he gives him/her) (drawings taken from Van Herreweghe & Vermeerbergen 1998: 88)

Figure 8: GIVE as recipient marker (pictures taken from Devriendt 2009)

1.4 Reduction of syntactic freedom

Heine et al. (1991) and Lehmann (1985) claim that grammaticalisation entails a limitation of syntactic freedom since a lexical element can be moved around more freely while a grammaticalised element is more limited in its syntagmatic relation to other sentence elements. In VGT GIVE as an auxiliary or preposition is again a good example of this structural change since both are always positioned right in front of the indirect object or recipient. This is quite striking since for VGT it is frequently very difficult to detect clear word order rules, since there are mostly only word order tendencies (Vermeerbergen 2004).

2 Principle of divergence

Following the principle of divergence (Hopper 1991: 24) it is possible that the different forms that can be found on a grammaticalisation cline exist next to each other at the same time while the variants can be put in a hierarchy from less to more grammaticalised. One such example is the variety with respect to the verb sign GIVE (itself a lexicalisation of a classifier construction). The examples can

all be found in Devriendt (2009) where they are discussed more elaborately.

1. Classifier construction or incorporated classifier: SOMEONE BOOK GIVE-classifier for book TO BOY. In this construction a classifier handshape or book is incorporated in the verb sign GIVE.

2. Conventionalised sign GIVE: SOMEONE BOOK $_1$GIVE$_{3l}$ TO BOY. Here the citation form of the verb sign GIVE is a conventionalized form although it is possible (but not compulsory) that spatial agreement is applied.

3. GIVE in a verb sandwich construction (Fischer & Janis 1990): WOMAN GIVE PRESENT TO BOY $_1$GIVE-classifier for present$_{3r}$. In this example the first GIVE is the conventionalised citation form without any spatial agreement and the second one has an incorporated classifier handshape for pre- sent and there is spatial agreement.

4. Light verb (cf. Butt 2004) GIVE: GIRL GIVE BOY STROKE$_{self}$ STROKE$_3$. Here again the citation form of GIVE is used, without any spatial agreement and with a certain level of semantic bleaching since a stroke cannot be handed over from one person to another.

5. Auxiliary GIVE: INDEX$_m$ RABBIT $_1$GIVE$_{3l}$ MAN SHOOT$_{ml}$. In this example (in which the rabbit is shooting the man) again the citation form of GIVE (with spatial agreement with the locus of the recipient) is used followed by the recipient. The label auxiliary is used here since its use seems to be very similar to the NGT auxiliary ACT-ON (Bos 1994).

6. Preposition GIVE: RABBIT GIVE MAN SHOOT$_{ml}$. The label preposition is given here since contrary to the auxiliary GIVE there is no spatial agreement and there is a strong phonological reduction (as described above).

3   Unidirectionality?

Most researchers would claim that grammaticalisation paths are unidirectional, i.e. that there is development from a full lexical element into a functional grammatical element. It appears that at least some counterexamples to this general rule can be found in VGT. For a more detailed description of these signs we refer to Huys (2008).

There is a possible development of the negative modal auxiliary WANT-NOT into a full lexical verb "*cannot be bothered*". Both signs are formed in exactly the same way, but the non-manual part of the sign differs because the latter has a compulsory mouth gesture (i.e. not referring to any Dutch word) while the former can be accompanied by the mouthing "wil-niet" (want-not).

Figure 9: WANT-NOT or "cannot be bothered" (pictures taken from Huys 2008: 66)

Another example could be the possible development of the negative modal auxiliary CANNOT plus MORE into a full lexical verb meaning "*cannot take it anymore*". Again the latter has to be formed with a compulsory mouth gesture while the former can be accompanied by the mouthings "kan niet meer" (can not more).

Figure 10: CANNOT MORE or "cannot take it anymore" (pictures taken from Huys 2008: 59)

Some researchers would regard these counterexamples as a challenge to the principle of unidirectionality, while others would take a more careful stand.

In conclusion, Pfau & Steinbach (2006: 87)) state "that sign languages employ exactly the same grammaticalization paths as do spoken languages. That is, the pathways proposed in the literature are modality-independent". From the small-scale study on VGT which has been reported on here, it seems to be able to corroborate this for VGT as well.

References

Bos, H.F. 1994. An auxiliary verb in sign language of the Netherlands. In I. Ahlgren, B. Bergman & M. Brennan (eds.), *Perspectives on sign language structure*. 37–53. Durham: International Sign Linguistics Association.

Butt, M. 2004. The light verb jungle. In G. Aygen, C. Bowern & C. Quinn (eds.), *Papers from the GSAS/Dudley House workshop on light verbs*. 1–50. Cambridge, MA: Harvard Working Papers in Linguistics.

Bybee, J.L. 1985. *Morphology: A study of the relation between meaning and form*. New York: John Benjamins.

Devriendt, T. 2009. *Vlaamse gebarentaal (VGT): De grammaticale functie van het werkwoord GEVEN en de voorzetsels OP, AAN, NAAR en TEGEN*: Ghent University MA thesis.

Fischer, S. & Janis, W. 1990. Verb sandwiches in american sign language. In S. Prillwitz & T. Vollhaber (eds.), *Current trends in european sign language research: Proceedings of the 3rd European Congress on Sign Language Research*. 279–293. Hamburg: Signum Press.

Givón, T. 1971. Historical syntax and synchronic morphology: An archaeologist's fieldtrip. *Chicago Linguistic Society* 7. 394–415.

Heine, B., Claudi, U. & Hünnemeyer, F. 1991. *Grammaticalization: A conceptual framework*. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Hopper, P.J. 1991. On some principles of grammaticization. In E.C. Traugott & B. Heine (eds.), *Approaches to grammaticalization*. 17–35. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Hopper, P.J. & Traugott, E.C. 2003 [1993]. *Grammaticalization*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press 2nd edn.

Huys, E. 2008. *Idiomatisch taalgebruik in de Vlaamse gebarentaal*: Ghent University MA thesis.

Janzen, T. 1995. The polygrammaticalization of *FINISH* in ASL. Unpublished manuscript, University of Manitoba, Winnipeg.

Janzen, T. & Shaffer, B. 2002. Gesture as the substrate in the process of ASL grammaticization. In R.P. Meier, K. Cormier & D. Quinto-Pozos (eds.), *Modality and structure in signed and spoken languages*. 199–223. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Lehmann, C. 1985. Grammaticalization: Synchronic variation diachronic change. *Lingua e Stile* 20. 303–318.

Loots, G., Devisé, I., Lichtert, G., Hoebrechts, N., Van De Ginste, C. & De Bruyne, I. 2003. *De gemeenschap van doven en slechthorenden in Vlaanderen. Com-*

municatie, taal en verwachtingen omtrent maatschappelijke toegankelijkheid. Ghent: Cultuur voor Doven.

Pfau, R. & Steinbach, M. 2006. Modality-independent and modality-specific aspects of grammaticalization in sign languages. *Linguistics in Potsdam* 24. 6–98.

Van Herreweghe, M. & Vermeerbergen, M. 1998. *Thuishoren in een wereld van gebaren*. Ghent: Academia Press.

Van Herreweghe, M. & Vermeerbergen, M. 2006. Interrogatives and negatives in Flemish sign language. In U. Zeshan (ed.), *Interrogative and negative constructions in sign languages*. 225–256. Nijmegen: Ishara Press.

Vermeerbergen, M. 2004. The quest for basic word order in Flemish sign language. In A.M. Bertonneau & G. Dal (eds.), *La linguistique de la LSF: recherches actuelles. Silexicales* 4. 257–267. Villeneuve d'Ascq: Université de Lille 3.

Wilcox, S. 2004. Gesture and language. Cross-linguistic and historical data from signed languages. *Gesture* 4. 43–73.

"Stemmen uit het verleden"
Het transcriptieproject bij de Vakgroep Taalkunde—Nederlands van de Gentse Universiteit

Jacques Van Keymeulen & Anne-Sophie Ghyselen

1 Inleiding

Prof. Lilianne Haegeman is een internationaal gereputeerde syntactica, die meermaals het West-Vlaamse dialect van het dorp Lapscheure, haar moedertaal, als onderzoeksobject gekozen heeft. Syntactisch onderzoek van de oraal overgeleverde traditionele taalvariëteiten is echter niet makkelijk, mede doordat syntactische constructies via opvragingen lastig te eliciteren zijn. Syntactische constructies zijn, in tegenstelling tot bijvoorbeeld lexicale items, weinig saillant en bovendien zijn ze dikwijls optioneel en geconditioneerd door situationele context. In de huidige tijd kan men bij opvragingen ook de invloed van de standaardtaal hoe langer hoe minder uitsluiten. Nagenoeg elke veldwerker heeft ondervonden dat een respondent bij een expliciete vraag een bepaalde constructie als ongrammaticaal kan beoordelen en die dan – op een minder bewaakt ogenblik – toch zelf gebruikt. De *Syntactische Atlas van de Nederlandse Dialecten* (SAND) legt getuigenis af van een complexe opvragingsmethode in vier rondes, met een inventarisatieronde, schriftelijke en mondelinge vragenlijsten, gecomplementeerd met telefonische navraag (zie Barbiers 2005). Blijkbaar moest een en ander dikwijls gecontroleerd worden.

De bovengemelde problematiek is natuurlijk al lang geleden ingezien. De professoren W. Pée (1903–1986) en V.F. Vanacker (1921–1999), die – als student! – de eerste syntaxis voor een Vlaams dialect schreef (namelijk dat van Aalst; Vanacker s.d.), vatten begin jaren 60 van de vorige eeuw het plan op om voor elke gemeente in Nederlandstalig België (+ Zeeuws- en Frans-Vlaanderen)

een geluidsopname te maken van een goede dialectspreker. Vooral Vanacker wou syntactisch onderzoek baseren op niet-geëliciteerd, spontaan gesproken basismateriaal. De onderneming werd opgevat als een aanvulling bij de *Reeks Nederlandse Dialectatlassen*, opgestart door E. Blancquaert (1894–1964), waarin dezelfde 141 zinnetjes in een plaatselijk dialect werden vertaald en nauwkeurig fonetisch werden genoteerd (zie `www.dialectzinnen.ugent.be`). In wat volgt, wordt in het kort een overzicht geboden van de ontstane verzameling geluidsopnames en de huidige pogingen tot ontsluiting ervan.

2   De verzameling dialectbanden aan de Vakgroep Taalkunde—Nederlands van de UGent

Het idee om systematisch dialectische geluidsfragmenten te verzamelen heeft veel te maken met de popularisering (en goedkoper worden) van de bandopnemer.[1] Het Dialectenbureau in Amsterdam (nu Meertens Instituut) begon al in 1952 op instigatie van Jo Daan met het systematisch registreren van dialectische geluidsopnames (zie Rensink 1962 en `https://www.meertens.knaw.nl/soundbites/`). Pée en Vanacker volgden dat voorbeeld in de jaren 60, nadat men erin geslaagd was (in 1962) om een subsidie los te krijgen van het toenmalige *Fonds voor Kollektief en Fundamenteel Onderzoek* (FKFO, naderhand opgegaan in het FWO-Vlaanderen) (Vanacker & De Schutter 1967).

Het idee was om via een zgn. "vrij gesprek" voor elke gemeente ongeveer 45 minuten spontaan gesproken dialect te verzamelen bij een goede dialectspreker. Die dialectspreker moest voldoen aan een aantal objectieve criteria: hoge ouderdom, lage geletterdheid en honkvastheid. Daardoor kwam men in de praktijk vaak bij de boerenbevolking terecht. Elke bandopneming wordt begeleid door een fiche (in A4-formaat), met de biografische metadata van de spreker.[2] Er werd dikwijls gebruikt gemaakt van studenten om geschikte infor-

---

[1] Aan de zgn. *Seminarie voor Nederlandse Taalkunde en Vlaamse Dialectologie* van de toenmalige Rijksuniversiteit Gent (RUG) werd door prof. Blancquaert een *Laboratorium voor Experimentele Fonetica* opgericht. De sectie Nederlands beschikt nog steeds over een – nu erg ouderwetse – geluidloze kamer. Blancquaert heeft ongetwijfeld in de jaren 20 en 30 dialectische geluidsopnames gemaakt, maar daarvan zijn we het spoor bijster geraakt – als ze tenminste nog ergens bestaan.

[2] Het is jammer dat die metadata niet ingesproken werden op de band zelf (die bevat enkel plaats en datum van opname), zodat men telkens de fiche erbij moet nemen om de opname goed te kunnen evalueren.

manten te zoeken – meestal werden mannen uitgekozen. De opnames gebeur-den bij de zegspersoon thuis, dikwijls met een dialectsprekende tussenpersoon – in die tijd konden de meeste studenten nog vrij goed een lokaal dialect spreken.[3]

De collectie bevat momenteel 783 banden voor 550 plaatsen, vooral uit het Vlaamse dialectgebied (= Frans-, West-, Oost- en Zeeuws-Vlaanderen).[4] Naar het oosten toe (provincies Antwerpen, Vlaams-Brabant en Limburg) neemt het aantal geluidsopnames af - uit die provincies komen gemiddeld minder studen-ten naar de Gentse universiteit.[5] Voor sommige dorpen zijn er verschillende op-nemingen, vooral voor die die aan de basis van een syntactische licentiaatsver-handeling hebben gelegen.[6] De meeste opnames zijn gemaakt bij mensen die tussen 1885 en 1910 geboren zijn; de oudste spreker (uit Bossuit) is geboren in 1871. In veel gevallen werd een zegspersoon uitgekozen die een zeldzaam tra-ditioneel ambacht had uitgeoefend. Voor Frans-Vlaanderen werd een speciale inspanning gedaan: daar heeft men een opname gemaakt voor élke gemeente waar nog inheemse Vlaamssprekenden aangetroffen konden worden.

De verzameling had in de eerste plaats een taalkundig oogmerk: hoewel op de begeleidende fiche plaats was ingeruimd voor notities omtrent "Onderwerp van het gesprek", werd de inhoud van het gesprek niet of maar heel gebrekkig aangeduid. Toch is het zo dat het geluidscorpus de grootste verzameling lev-ensverhalen uitmaakt van zeer laag geschoolde mensen, die niet alleen het be-gin van de 'moderne tijd' hebben meegemaakt (aanleg van elektriciteit, eerste fiets, eerste auto ...), maar ook twee wereldoorlogen hebben doorstaan. Vele verhalen leggen getuigenis af van de grote armoede en onwetendheid waarmee een groot deel van de Vlaamse plattelandsbevolking zo'n honderd jaar geleden heeft moeten leven.

---

[3]Meestal werd met een Telefunken M 25 of met een Revox-toestel opgenomen (BASF-banden, type LGS 35, op spoelen van 18 cm diameter met snelheid 19 = 48 minuten geluid). De sectie Nederlandse Taalkunde heeft nog steeds een gebruiksklaar Revox-toestel waarmee de originele banden beluisterd kunnen worden.

[4]De verdeling per provincies / streek was in 2009 als volgt: Frans-Vlaanderen: 113, West-Vlaanderen: 188, Oost-Vlaanderen: 285, Antwerpen: 85, Vlaams-Brabant: 47, Limburg: 29, Henegouwen: 5, Zeeland: 31.

[5]Het is erg jammer dat men voor de verzameling niet met de KULeuven heeft kunnen samen-werken.
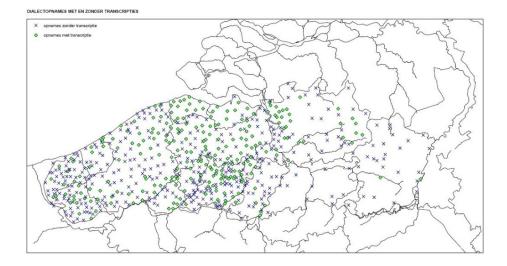
[6]Zie bijvoorbeeld Van Keymeulen (1975).

Figure 1: Overzicht van de dialectopnames in Nederlandstalig België, Frans- en Zeeuws-Vlaanderen (situatie in 2009)

3 `www.dialectloket.be`

In 2009 werd, mede dankzij rector Paul Van Cauwenberge, aan de UGent een wetenschapspopulariseringsproject goedgekeurd, waarmee een website werd gemaakt over taalvariatie in het algemeen en dialecten in het bijzonder. In 2012 werd daaraan een apart project toegevoegd, nl. "Stemmen uit het verleden. Digitaliseren en ontsluiten van dialectopnames gemaakt in de jaren 60 en 70 door het Seminarie voor Nederlandse Taalkunde en Vlaamse Dialectologie". Beide ondernemingen werden naderhand ook gesteund door aanvullende subsidies van de Vlaamse Gemeenschap en van de provincies Oost- en West-Vlaanderen, Vlaams-Brabant, Antwerpen en Limburg (zie `http://www.dialectloket.be/` `geluid/stemmen-uit-het-verleden/`).[7]

De digitalisering hield volgende zaken in. Allereerst werden de 783 geluidsbanden gedigitaliseerd. Een technisch medewerker van de toenmalige vakgroep Nederlandse Taalkunde, Rieke Willems, heeft ongeveer 500 banden op zeer professionele manier naar wav-bestanden omgezet. Toen mevr. Willems wegens een reorganisatie naar een andere sectie van de vakgroep werd gemuteerd, is de rest van de banden gedigitaliseerd door een gespecialiseerde firma.

---

[7]Die subsidies werden verworven via de organisatie "Variaties vzw. Koepelorganisatie voor Dialecten en Oraal Erfgoed in Vlaanderen".

Op de tweede plaats werden alle metadata in een database ondergebracht. Op de derde plaats werd door vrijwilligers van de meeste banden korte inhouden gemaakt, voorafgegaan door trefwoorden, zodat de verzameling inhoudelijk ontsloten werd. Momenteel zijn er ongeveer 700 korte inhouden in de database ingebracht. Op de vierde plaats werden alle transcripties (typoscripten) – voor zover aanwezig – ingescand en in de database ingevoerd; het zijn er 318 in totaal. Die transcripties zijn niet fonetisch, maar 'woordelijk', d.w.z. dat de dialectische uitspraak in een vernederlandste vorm is weergegeven. De typoscripten werden in de jaren 60 en 70 gemaakt door jobstudenten aan de hand van een aantal richtlijnen – die met wisselende ijver en kunde werden opgevolgd. De verzameling originele banden is bij het universiteitsarchief ondergebracht; kopieën van de digitale versie ervan (+ kopieën van de fiches met metadata) zijn gedeponeerd zowel bij de Koninklijke Academie voor Nederlandse Taal- en Letterkunde (KANTL) in Gent als bij het Meertens Instituut in Amsterdam.[8]

---

4 Het transcriptieproject

Naarmate de traditionele dialecten verdwijnen, verhoogt de waarde van de verzameling geluidsopnames. De specifieke waarde ervan heeft vooral te maken met de spontaneïteit van de gesprekken, hoewel ook daar met de 'observer's paradox' rekening gehouden moet worden.[9] In de huidige digitale tijden, heeft men echter nood aan een ander type transcripties dan een (beperkte) aantal typoscripten, die niet digitaal doorzoekbaar zijn.

In het academiejaar 2016-2017 werd daarom aan de sectie Nederlandse Taalkunde voor de bachelorscripties een onderzoekslijn opgestart met als bedoeling digitaal doorzoekbare transcripties te maken, die gealigneerd bleven met het geluid.[10] De bedoeling is ervaring op te doen en een transcriptieprotocol te verfijnen dat dan in de toekomst gebruikt kan worden bij wetenschappelijke projecten. Die ervaring heeft in elk geval al geleerd dat de transcriptie van de verzameling erg dringend is: jonge mensen hebben al heel wat moeite om het ouderwetse dialect te begrijpen en ook hebben ze geen voeling meer met de gespreksonderwerpen, zoals bijvoorbeeld de manier waarop vlas werd geoogst, of hoe eertijds palingen werden gevangen. Ook wordt getracht de verzameling uit te breiden – vooral naar het oosten toe: de studenten werd gevraagd een bandopneming te maken voor een plaats waarvoor er nog geen bestond. Het is immers nog steeds mogelijk honkvaste mensen te vinden met een lage opleiding die talig gesocialiseerd zijn vóór de jaren 60 van de vorige eeuw, toen door de veralgemeende toename van de mobiliteit, de verhoging van de scholingsgraad en de introductie van de massamedia een massale taalverandering is op gang gekomen. De zegsman/zegsvrouw moet nu dus vóór 1940 geboren zijn, zodat de kans vrij hoog is dat de zegspersoon nog een traditioneel dialect als primaire moedertaal heeft verworven.[11]

De studenten maken voor de transcripties gebruik van het programma ELAN en transcriberen het dialect op twee niveaus: licht vernederlandst en zwaar vernederlandst. Met lichte vernederlandsing wordt bedoeld dat enkel de fonologie naar het Nederlands wordt aangepast, d.w.z. dat de morfologie en syntaxis van het dialect ongewijzigd blijft, maar dat alle woorden worden neergeschreven alsof ze in het Nederlands bestonden. Clitische vormen worden aan het grondwo-

---

[9]De observer's paradox valt voor de banden goed mee omdat de meeste zegspersonen werkelijk niets anders dan dialect kónden spreken.

[10]In het academiejaar 2016-2017 en 2017-2018 gingen er telkens een viertal studenten aan de slag.

[11]Een zegspersoon is momenteel idealiter dus ongeveer 80 jaar of ouder.

ord geschreven, maar gescheiden door een #. De transcriptie met zware vernederlandsing is op die lichte vernederlandsing gebaseerd. Hier worden de functiewoorden – ook die in de clitische vormen – vertaald naar het Nederlands. Die zware vernederlandsing is nodig om achteraf softwaretools te kunnen gebruiken voor (semi-automatische) Parts of Speech-tagging, lemmatisering, en andere vormen van annotatie. Het transcriptieprotocol voor een dergelijke manier van werken is vrij complex; de studenten hadden gemiddeld ongeveer een uur tijd nodig om 5 minuten geluid te transcriberen.

Om het onderscheid tussen de lichte en zware vernederlandsing te illustreren, geven we hieronder een stuk van een transcriptie uit Ieper weer. In de opname, die dateert uit 1967, vertelt een toen 62-jarige vrouw (die we het label N72_sp1 geven) over de oorlog, haar carrière en pensioen, het leven in Ieper en de jeugd van tegenwoordig. Het excerpt is kort, maar getuigt meteen van een aantal interessante syntactische dialectverschijnselen, zoals dubbele negaties met het partikel *en*, variaties op het introducerende *er* en subjectverdubbelingen.

(1)　　　　N72_sp1　　ja a#je#t　nu ingaat
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl ja als je het nu ingaat
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　wuk zit er nu veel in de jongheid?
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl wat　zit er nu veel in de jongheid?
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　zeg mijn dat.
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl zeg mij　dat.
　　　　　　Int_VV ze zijn allema...
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　allemale nie　nee#s. allemale nie　wi. ke zeggen dat op
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl allemaal niet nee ze. allemaal niet wi. ik　zeg　　dat op
　　　　　　jou nie　wi jongen.
　　　　　　jou niet wi jongen.
　　　　　　Int_V ja ja m...
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　maa　algelijk vele.
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl maar algelijk veel.
　　　　　　Int_VV t#is toch veel veranderd.
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　je zout#ier moeten zijn in de zomer eni meneer.
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl je zou hier　moeten zijn in de zomer eni meneer.
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　op de Remparden.
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl op de Remparten.
　　　　　　Int_VV ja.
　　　　　　N72_sp1　　ze komen van t#schole　met under carnassière. ze
　　　　　　N72_sp1_ndl ze komen van de school met hun　　carnassière. ze

staan en likken en frikkelen.
staan en likken en frikkelen.
N72_sp1 en ze moeten nie peinzen dat ze nunder generen wi.
N72_sp1_ndl en ze moeten niet peinzen dat ze zich generen wi.
N72_sp1 ze generen under nie wi.
N72_sp1_ndl ze generen zich niet wi.
N72_sp1 en sommigste mensen en durven me nunder
N72_sp1_ndl en sommige mensen en durven met hun
kinders... kleine kinders op de vestingen nie meer gaan.
kinderen... kleine kinderen op de vestingen niet meer gaan.
Int_VV ja ja.
N72_sp1 voilà.
N72_sp1_ndl voilà.
N72_sp1 da... da betaamt algelijk nie.
N72_sp1_ndl dat... dat betaamt algelijk niet.
Int_VV ja ja betaamt nie...
N72_sp1 da#ze doen da ze willen. ze zijn jong.
N72_sp1_ndl dat ze doen dat ze willen. ze zijn jong.
N72_sp1 maa da#ze#t doen waa da ze nie ezien en zijn.
N72_sp1_ndl maar dat ze het doen waar dat ze niet gezien en zijn.
Int_VV voilà. andere mensen...
N72_sp1 m#en wijder ook jong eweest.
N72_sp1_ndl we hebben wij ook jong geweest.
N72_sp1 m#en wijder ook evrijd.
N72_sp1_ndl we hebben wij ook gevrijd.
N72_sp1 is#t geen waar?
N72_sp1_ndl is het geen waar?
N72_sp1 maa me deden#t algelijk nie in de presentie van
N72_sp1_ndl maar we deden het algelijk niet in de presentie van
alleman.
alleman.
Int_VV ja ja ja.
Int_VV ja ja da#s just.
N72_sp1 maa nu... ze zijn nie meer beschaamd voo nie...
N72_sp1_ndl maar nu... ze zijn niet meer beschaamd voor nie...
N72_sp1 tot op strate.
N72_sp1_ndl tot op straat.

N72_sp1   ze... ze staan daa e...   en t#moogt passeren wie dat
N72_sp1_ndl ze... ze staan daar en... en het mag passeren wie dat
er wilt.
er wil.
N72_sp1   ze staan daa.   en... en... en z#angen   aan mekanders
N72_sp1_ndl ze staan daar... en... en... en ze hangen aan mekanders
nunder mond en xxx.
hun   mond en xxx
Int_VV ja t#is xxx.
N72_sp1   da gemene...
N72_sp1_ndl dat gemene...
N72_sp1   k#zijn pertang ook nie heilig maa ke zien dat al nie
N72_sp1_ndl ik ben pertang ook niet heilig maar ik zie   dat al niet
gaarne.
gaarne.

5   Toekomstige projecten?

De onderzoekslijn voor de bachelorscripties heeft als bedoeling wetenschappelijke projecten voor te bereiden. Gelukkig zijn er nu in principe ook wetenschappelijke fondsen beschikbaar om databases aan te leggen voor toekomstig onderzoek. Daarom is het zaak om transcripties te maken en publiek beschikbaar te stellen die een zo ruim mogelijk onderzoeksveld kunnen bedienen. De transcriptie van de volledige verzameling van 780 banden – of een representatieve selectie ervan – zou in elk geval een taalmonument tot stand brengen waarmee onverschillig welke onderzoeker van dialecten of historisch Nederlands zijn voordeel zou kunnen doen.

Prof. Anne Breitbarth (sectie Duitse taalkunde UGent) is erin geslaagd FWO-financiering te verwerven voor een pilootproject met de transcriptie van 30 opnames (+ annotatie daarvan), netjes verdeeld over de verschillende dialectgroepen in Nederlandstalig België en Frans- en Zeeuws-Vlaanderen. Ook hopen we het beste van een andere aanvraag voor de transcriptie van alle Frans-Vlaamse opnames. De bewerking van Frans-Vlaanderen is uiteraard het dringendst; het Vlaams in Frankrijk is zeer op de terugweg; de oude dialecten zijn hoe langer hoe moeilijker te begrijpen. Er is ook aan andere universiteiten (o.a. Leuven en Antwerpen) grote belangstelling voor de Gentse verzameling. Het is de bedoeling binnen afzienbare tijd een zgn. Herculesproject in te dienen bij

het Fonds voor Wetenschappelijk Onderzoek – Vlaanderen om de verzameling – meer dan een halve eeuw jaar na het ontstaan ervan – definitief te ontsluiten.

References

Barbiers, Sjef. 2005. De syntactische atlas van de nederlandse dialecten. *Taal en Tongval (Themanummer)* 18. 7–40.

Rensink, W. G. 1962. Dialecten op de band. *Taal en Tongval* 14. 184–196.

Van Keymeulen, Jacques. 1975. De syntaxis van het Wichelse dialect. Onuitgegeven licentiaatsverhandeling, Universiteit Gent.

Vanacker, Valeer F. & Georges De Schutter. 1967. Zuidnederlandse dialekten op de band. *Taal en Tongval* 19. 35–51.

Vanacker, V.F. s.d. Syntaxis van het aalsters dialect. *Werken uitgegeven door de Koninklijke Commissie voor Toponymie en Dialectologie* 4.

Diary null subjects: an analogy with imperatives?

Andrew Weir

Liliane and I first met at the LAGB meeting in 2008. I wasn't presenting; I was there to meet her. Caroline Heycock had sent Liliane my undergraduate dissertation, about null subjects in spoken and written English, which had naturally drawn heavily on Liliane's work on diary drop (Haegeman 1990, 1997, 2007, 2013, 2018, Haegeman & Ihsane 1999, 2001); and we talked for some time about my dissertation and about the possibility of my coming to Ghent for doctoral study. Well, I took a detour via Massachusetts to get to Ghent, but I got there eventually; and can honestly say that my year there with Liliane as my supervisor was one of the most enjoyable I have had as a linguist. Liliane was and is a fantastic mentor, co-author, and friend. However, when I was in Ghent, we got distracted by the properties of response particles in West Flemish, and never actually returned in a systematic way (though we've exchanged a lot of emails about it) to the phenomenon that 'got us together' in the first place – diary drop. This squib is an attempt to remedy that – and an invitation to Liliane for us, as we have thought we should for a while, to join forces and solve this knotty problem for good.

We start with an empirical question: are there person restrictions on null subjects in 'reduced written register' (RWR)? First-person null subjects are indubitably OK, and third-person null subjects also are given an appropriate discourse (cf. e.g. Haegeman 2007: 96), but this is somewhat difficult to determine for second person; diary context does not lend itself to second-person subjects, and interrogatives (which might more naturally have second-person subjects) are independently ruled out with null subjects (in any person) in English diaries (Haegeman 1997 a.o.). Berthelot (2017: 88) states that second-person singular null subjects are ruled out in diary contexts in French, but in Weir (2018: 159), I suggested that null second-person pronouns were grammatical in English RWR, on the basis of the below example.

(1)   (comments on a student's essay)
       $\emptyset_{[2p]}$ Don't need to go into so much detail here.

But I should have been more careful. The problem is that (1) is grammatical in spoken register too, something which is the result of a quite different process, a prosodically-governed operation that can target a wide range of deaccented utterance-initial material (Napoli 1982, Weir 2012). That raises the possibility that (1) is simply a rendering in text of that spoken string. To check if diary drop *per se* can delete second-person pronouns, one needs to check examples like (2), which are ungrammatical in speech (see Weir (2012) for why). And interestingly, in my judgment, they are *also* degraded in written register (e.g. text messaging[1]), even if the 'topic' of the utterance is plausibly the addressee. For me, the examples in (2) contrast fairly sharply with first-person dropped subjects (3).

(2)   You shouldn't have done that. ??$\emptyset_{[2p]}$ Are going to regret it. / ??$\emptyset_{[2p]}$ Will regret it. / ??$\emptyset_{[2p]}$ Have been reported to the police.

(3) $\emptyset_{[1p]}$ Am going to regret this. / $\emptyset_{[1p]}$ Will regret this. / $\emptyset_{[1p]}$ Have been reported to the police.

If this is right – and I should caution here that I have not done any corpus work to back up my intuitions – then it seems that second-person subjects can *not* undergo diary drop. This distinction between first- and second-person does not immediately fall out from extant analyses, as far as I can see. (I'll return to third person briefly below.) I want to sketch here an alternative line of attack. Consider the below properties of diary drop (from Haegeman 2007: 102):

(4)   Diary null subjects are almost always root subjects: they are marginal in embedded contexts without a complementizer, and ruled out under complementizers or in adjunct or relative clauses.[2]
       a. $\emptyset$ Am going to the gym later.
       b. ??$\emptyset$ Think $\emptyset$ will go to the gym later.
       c. *$\emptyset$ Think that $\emptyset$ will go to the gym later.
       d. *$\emptyset$ Was sore after $\emptyset$ had gone to the gym.

---

[1] I am assuming here that the grammatical properties of e.g. text message register are fundamentally the same, at least when it comes to subject drop, as diary register. This might not be a safe assumption.

[2] Modulo the more liberal, 'Bridget Jones' dialect described in Haegeman & Ihsane (1999, 2001). The properties of that dialect remain to be accounted for. The marginality (as opposed to complete ungrammaticality) of (4b) represents my judgment.

(5)   Diary null subjects are strongly ungrammatical in construction with subject-auxiliary inversion or with *wh*-fronting.

   a.   *Am ∅ just going mad?
   b.   *What was ∅ thinking?
   c.   *Only then will ∅ do that.

(6)   Diary null subjects are degraded in construction with argument topicalization – although (in my judgment) the degradation is not as strong as with SAI or *wh*-fronting.

   a.   ??More problems, ∅ don't need. (Thrasher 1977: 83)

(7)   Diary null subjects are however permitted in construction with left-peripheral adjuncts, or with left-dislocation.

   a.   Tomorrow ∅ will go to gym.
   b.   If you are hungry, ∅ have left some biscuits in the cupboard.
   c.   ?More problems, ∅ don't need 'em. (cf. Haegeman 2007: fn. 8)

A fact that I don't believe has previously been noted is that this constellation of facts lines up nearly perfectly with constraints on (English) imperatives.[3]

(8)   Only permitted in root contexts (marginally in certain complementizer-less embedded clauses)

   a.   Fix the problem.
   b.   ?He said fix the problem. (Crnič & Trinh 2009)
   c.   *He said that fix the problem.
   d.   *I demand that fix the problem.

(9)   No *wh*-fronting/auxiliary fronting

   a.   Don't touch! – Don't touch what?/*What don't touch?[4]
   b.   Never eat this./*Never do eat this. (cp. negative inversion/do-support in declaratives: *Never do I eat this*, Henry 1995: 68f.)

---

[3]Not constraints on imperative null subjects – the grammaticality of the examples in (9)–(11) does not change if the subject is overt – but constraints on the syntax of imperatives generally.

[4]One might wonder if *don't* has in fact undergone subject-aux inversion here (with the unpronounced subject), but Zhang (1991), Henry (1995), Rupp (2007), Weir (2013) give reasons to believe that imperative *don't* is base-generated above the subject.

(10)   Argument topicalization marginal (but better than *wh*-movement/SAI)[5]

      a. ??These instructions, read carefully.

      b. ??These cookies, don't touch.

(11)   Adjunct topics and left-dislocation OK

      a.   Tomorrow, go to the gym.

      b.   If you're hungry, eat some biscuits.

      c.   ?These cookies, don't touch 'em.

We might hope to capitalize on these similarities, and on the fact that imperatives, exceptionally among clause types in English, allow null (second-person) subjects. One common way of understanding, or encoding, this latter fact is to propose that some functional head is – in imperatives only – endowed with second-person ϕ-features (see recently e.g. Jensen (2003), Bennis (2006), Zanuttini (2008)). These features can enter in to some (obligatorily very local) relationship (such as Agree) with a *pro* subject with the same features, licensing its non-pronunciation. Such a representation 'encodes the addressee in the syntax', as Zanuttini (2008) puts it. Authors differ in where they put the ϕ-features, but it seems plausible to me that a construction restricted to imperatives should have its etiology localized to the head that encodes the force of the clause (cf. Bennis 2006: sec. 3.1), so this is where I propose the ϕ-features are in (12).

(12)   [$_{ForceP}$ Force$_{[imp],[2p]}$ [$_{vP}$ *pro*$_{[2p]}$ [$_{VP}$ eat your dinner]]]

Suppose, now, that just as *imperatives* encode the *addressee* in the syntax, written-register *declaratives* encode (or can encode) the *speaker*.[6] That is, these registers allow a declarative Force head to (optionally) be endowed with first-person ϕ-features. This Force head can enter into the same (obligatorily local) relation with a *pro* subject and license its non-pronunciation.

(13)   [$_{ForceP}$ Force$_{[decl],[1p]}$ [$_{TP}$ *pro*$_{[1p]}$ [$_{TP}$ am going to the gym later]]]

One might speculate that these ϕ-endowed Force heads are highly restricted in their distribution (only to root or perhaps certain 'embedded root' environments,

---

[5]Though the data are variable here. Potsdam (1998: ex. 82) states that sentences like *The tie, give to Bob; the aftershave, give to Don!* are fully grammatical. They do sound considerably better than those in (10), for reasons I don't understand.

[6]It needs to be worked out how this aligns with proposals that both speaker and addressee are *always* encoded in the left-peripheral layer, e.g. Speas & Tenny (2003), Sigurðsson (2004), Sigurðsson & Maling (2010), Haegeman & Hill (2013).

cf. Portner et al. (2014) on embedded imperatives); that the relevant relationship between the Force head and the *pro* subject would be disrupted, in both imperatives and diary sentences, in cases where material has moved to the left periphery; and that the obligatory localness of the relation between Force and *pro* rules out e.g. null objects. Together, then, this is what leads to the correlation between diary null subjects and imperatives shown in (4)–(11).[7] One might also speculate that the diary context provides a 'natural' environment for something like this, a declarative Force head endowed with [1p] features, to develop; diaries are prototypically sequences of declaratives where the speaker (writer) is recounting their actions. Once this head was independently available in speakers' lexicons for the diary register, it might also be plausible to assume that it could easily 'jump' to other written registers, such as text message register.

All of the preceding paragraph is highly speculative, and much remains to be worked out. One glaring lacuna is the handling of dropped third-person subjects:

(14)   a. $\emptyset_{[1p]}$ Saw Bill yesterday. $\emptyset_{[3p]}$ Was absolutely furious about the bill he'd received.
       b. $\emptyset_{[3p,expl]}$ Is raining. (Haegeman & Ihsane 1999: 121)

To explain (14a), we might appeal to Weir (2018)'s proposal for (third-person) object drop, which proposes the existence of a null D in reduced written register, giving rise to completely silent third-person pronouns. In principle this could be independent of the licensing of null first-person pronouns. However, I crafted that system specifically to exclude the possibility of null expletive pronouns (which I argue do not occur in object position in RWR); so (14b) remains an issue. And there are several other places where the basic idea needs to be fleshed out. This squib, then, shouldn't be taken as anything definitive. It's rather something on the order of a tentative proposal – and an invitation to Liliane that, if she finds the ideas here intriguing, we might think about developing them together, and solving the problem of diary drop for good, or at least for a while.

---

[7]If this is right, it would imply that, if a structure includes ϕ-endowed Force, the relevant relationship between Force and the subject must be established whether or not the subject is pronounced (because the imperative examples in (9)–(11) have the same status whether or not the subject is pronounced). On my reading of Zanuttini (2008) (who puts the action in a Jussive head rather than Force), this is true for the abstraction relationship that Jussive establishes over the subject, but Zanuttini also discusses (in her section 4) cases where she argues that the Agree relationship between Jussive and the subject can be blocked (without leading to ungrammaticality). Working out if what I am saying is compatible with what Zanuttini says is one of many areas where the present proposal will have to be developed.

All the very best, Liliane – $\emptyset_{1p}$ hope ?*$\emptyset_{2p}$ have enjoyed reading this squib as much as ?*/%$\emptyset_{1p}$ enjoyed writing it!

Referenties

Bennis, H. 2006. Agreement, *pro* and imperatives. In P. Ackema, P. Brandt, M. Schoorlemmer & F. Weerman (eds.), *Arguments and agreement*, 101–23. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Berthelot, F. 2017. *Movement of and out of subjects in French*: Université de Genève dissertation.

Crnič, L. & Tue T. 2009. Embedding imperatives. In S. Lima, K. Mullin & B. Smith (eds.), *Proceedings of NELS 39*, 227–39. Amherst, MA: GLSA.

Haegeman, L. 1990. Understood subjects in English diaries. *Multilingua* 9(2). 157–199.

Haegeman, L.. 1997. Register variation, truncation, and subject omission in English and in French. *English Language and Linguistics* 1(2). 233–70.

Haegeman, L. 2007. Subject omission in present-day written English: On the theoretical relevance of peripheral data. *Rivista di grammatica generativa* 32. 91–124.

Haegeman, L. 2013. Diary subject omission and the privilege of the root. *Lingua* 130. 88–110.

Haegeman, L. 2018. Unspeakable sentences: Subject omission in written registers: a cartographic analysis. *Linguistic Variation* 17(2). 229–50.

Haegeman, L. & V. Hill. 2013. The syntactization of discourse. In R. Folli, C. Sevdali & R. Truswell (eds.), *Syntax and its limits*, 370–90. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Haegeman, L. & T. Ihsane. 1999. Subject ellipsis in embedded clauses in English. *English Language and Linguistics* 3(1). 117–145.

Haegeman, L. & T. Ihsane. 2001. Adult null subjects in the non-*pro*-drop languages: two diary dialects. *Language Acquisition* 9(4). 329–346.

Henry, A. 1995. *Belfast English and standard English: dialect variation and parameter setting*. New York/Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Jensen, B. 2003. Syntax and semantics of imperative subjects. *Nordlyd* 31(1). 150–65.

Napoli, D J. 1982. Initial material deletion in English. *Glossa* 16(1). 85–111.

Portner, P., M. Pak & R. Zanuttini. 2014. The addressee in embedded imperatives. Handout. `https://raffaella-zanuttini-irqo.squarespace.com/s/Addressee_in_embedded_imperatives__Rutgers_.pdf`.

Potsdam, E. 1998. *Syntactic issues in the English imperative*. New York, NY: Garland.

Rupp, L. 2007. 'Inverted' imperatives. In W. van der Wurff (ed.), *Imperative clauses in generative grammar: Studies in honour of Frits Beukema* (Linguistik Aktuell/Linguistics Today 103), Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Sigurðsson, H.Á. 2004. The syntax of Person, Tense, and speech features. *Italian Journal of Linguistics/Rivista di Linguistica* 16. 219–51.

Sigurðsson, H.Á. & J. Maling. 2010. The Empty Left Edge Condition. In M T. Putnam (ed.), *Asymmetry in grammar* (Language Faculty and Beyond 3), 315–43. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Speas, P. & C. Tenny. 2003. Configurational properties of point of view roles. In A.M. Di Sciullo (ed.), *Asymmetry in grammar*, 315–43. Amsterdam: John Benjamins.

Thrasher, R. H. 1977. *One way to say more by saying less: A study of so-called subjectless sentences* (Kwansei Gakuin University Monograph Series 11). Tokyo: The Eihosha Ltd. Non vidi.

Weir, A. 2012. Left-edge deletion in English and subject omission in diaries. *English Language and Linguistics* 16(1). 105–29.

Weir, A. 2013. The syntax of imperatives in Scots. In J. Cruickshank & R. M. Millar (eds.), *After the storm: papers from the Forum for Research on the Languages of Scotland and Ulster*, 261–85. Aberdeen: FRLSU.

Weir, A. 2018. Object drop and article drop in reduced written register. *Linguistic Variation* 17(2). 157–85.

Zanuttini, R. 2008. Encoding the addressee in the syntax: evidence from English imperative subjects. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 26. 185–218.

Zhang, S. 1991. Negation in imperatives and interrogatives: arguments against inversion. In *CLS 27: The Parasession on Negation*, 356–73. Chicago: Chicago Linguistic Society.

Recording and explaining: exploring the German ditransitive alternation

Klaas Willems, Ludovic De Cuypere & Hilde De Vaere

1. In the introduction to Thinking Syntactically (2006), Liliane Haegeman writes

> that the goal of scientists is not merely taking note of and recording certain phenomena and thus 'knowing' about them: scientists want to explain the phenomena they have observed.

The argument that in linguistics, too, the ultimate goal is to explain linguistic phenomena rather than to merely record them, is particularly pertinent since the 'quantitative turn' in modern linguistics. In the wake of this turn, many scholars have laid great emphasis on amassing data, according to some critics – not only generative linguists – to the detriment of 'real' explanations. In this discussion note, we offer some thoughts on the relation between explanation and the extensive recording of data from a 'moderate' functional point of view. The paper takes the form of a case study in which we consider the variation in form and function of sentences with the ditransitive verb *geben* in present-day standard German. This is the subject matter of an ongoing corpus-based research project in the General Linguistics section of the Linguistics Department at Ghent University.

2. Our starting point is the common assumption that the only ditransitive construction in which *geben* occurs in the standard language is the Indirect Object Construction (henceforth: IOC) with the RECIPIENT coded in the dative and the THEME coded in the accusative, e.g.:[1]

(1)   Diese Kommunikation gibt **den Bürgern**_{REC} ein Gefühl der Sicherheit_{THEME}.
      'This communication gives the citizens a sense of security.'

---

[1] All example sentences are drawn from the 42-billion-word corpus DeReKo (Deutsches Referenz korpus, Mannheim) available at http://www.ids-mannheim.de/cosmas2/.

However, corpus research reveals that *geben* also occurs in the Prepositional Object Construction (henceforth POC): while the THEME is still coded in the accusative, the RECIPIENT is headed by the preposition *an*, which in this construction governs the accusative:

(2)   Kronauer will eine Liste mit allen Teilnehmern_THEME **an die Stadt_REC** geben.
       'Kronauer wants to give a list of all participants to the city.'

(3)   Der Bund muss nicht direkt das Geld_THEME **an die Familien_REC** geben.
       'The federal government does not have to give the money directly to the families.'

This finding contravenes the commonly held view that the IOC/POC alternation does not exist with *geben* in German, whereas the so-called 'dative alternation' is common with the corresponding verb in many Germanic languages (cf. Rappaport Hovav & Levin 2008, Haspelmath & Baumann 2013). Note, moreover, that the IOC/POC alternation is well-attested with other ditransitive verbs in German such as *übergeben* 'hand over', *zurückgeben* 'give back', *abgeben* 'pass, hand over', *schicken* 'send', *ausleihen* 'lend (out)', *senden* 'send', *übersenden* 'send', and so on. As a matter of fact, with morphologically complex *geben*-verbs there is no empirical evidence that one variant outnumbers the other.

In the last two decades a great number of formal, functional and cognitive studies have been devoted to the English dative alternation or 'dative shift', as it is commonly called in formalist scholarship. The focus has been on such verbs as *give*, *send*, *throw* and *sell*, which in English either occur in the 'double-object construction' (*He gave his 24-year-old son an allowance for spending money*) or the '*to*-construction (*He gave the newspaper to his 24-year-old son*). Research into the corresponding alternation in present-day German has been lagging behind (cf.Matzel 1976, Wegener 1985, Proost 2015). In this contribution we discuss some preliminary findings based on ongoing corpus-based research. We limit ourselves to observations on the simplex verb *geben*. Our study is confined to written language (DeReKo).

3. We conducted random searches in DeReKo in order to acquire sufficient data for a comparison of IOC and POC with *geben*, but because POC turned out to be much less frequent than IOC with this particular verb (approximately 4% of the occurrences), we turned to specific queries with the preposition *an* to arrive at a balanced data set. All sample sentences were annotated for a number of factors along the lines of existing corpus studies of the English dative alter-

nation (e.g. Bresnan 2007, Bresnan & Ford 2010). The factors in our study are: length difference (heaviness) and order of RECIPIENT and THEME, voice, pronominality, animacy, concreteness, specific verb sense (concrete, propositional, abstract, cf. below), idiomaticity, definiteness, discourse-givenness. The investigation follows up on previous research, which relates the alternation primarily to two well-established types of motivation: universally applicable processing constraints, in particular heaviness considerations (cf. Hawkins 1994), and information structure preferences (Thompson 1995, Bresnan 2007, Bresnan & Ford 2010, Rappaport Hovav & Levin 2008). According to Hawkins' principle of early immediate constituents, the orders T(HEME)-R(ECIPIENT) and R-T are determined by the relative weight of both objects, the heavier one tending to be placed after the lighter one (one of 'Behaghel's Laws'). Thompson's principle of 'topicworthiness' adds to this that more 'topicworthy' objects tend to be placed before less 'topicworthy' ones, with topicworthiness defined as 'a cluster of properties' that influence the packaging of information with regard to the likelihood of a noun phrase being the topic of discussion (Thompson 1995). Thus, pronominal, animate, definite, specific, identifiable, given and short objects are taken to be associated with referents that are more topicworthy than inanimate, indefinite, non-specific, non-identifiable, new and long objects. Based on this topicworthiness principle, IOC with R-T order is expected to occur mainly with topicworthy RECIPIENTS whereas POC with T-R order mainly with topicworthy THEMES.

The analysis of N = 1341 sentences with the verb *geben* reveals that 95,5% of the IOC sentences have R-T order and 4,5% T-R order (712/33) while 99,5% of the POC sentences have T-R order and 0,5% R-T order (594/2). Although German has a relatively free word order compared to English, the correlation between each variant and a specific order of the two objects is nevertheless very similar for *give* and *geben*. Logistic regression analysis further shows that the IOC/POC alternation is significantly associated with multiple factors in German (cf. De Vaere et al. 2018). POC is positively associated with RECIPIENTS that are longer than the THEME, collective RECIPIENTS (e.g., *Familie* 'family', *Präsidium* 'executive committee', *Chor* 'choir') and RECIPIENTS that can designate both concrete locations and institutions in the abstract (e.g., *Polizei* 'police', *Ministerium* 'government department, ministry') while the THEMES are generally discourse-given or at least accessible, often pronominal and they tend to designate concrete objects or propositional contents. There is also a significant correlation of POC with passive voice. Conversely, IOC is positively associated with discourse-new and abstract THEMES and with pronominal, discourse-given and animate RECIPIENTS that are shorter than the THEME. Representative corpus-extracted examples of IOC and POC are

(4) and (5), respectively:

(4)   "Der Sieg gegen Tim Henman hat **mir**_{REC} viel Selbstvertrauenr_{THEME} gegeben", sagte Schüttler.
        "The victory over Tim Henman gave me a lot of confidence", Schüttler said.'

(5)   Wir werden unseren Bericht_{THEME} in der ersten Januar-Hälfte **an das Präsidium**_{REC} geben.
        'We will deliver our report to the Bureau in the first half of January.'

We also found that one particular use of *geben* in combination with *an* (occasionally also *in*, *auf* or *über*) is strictly confined to POC, viz. when it is used as a phrasal verb in the sense 'add an ingredient to' in the context of preparing food, but in this case the prepositional phrase is not a RECIPIENT argument; (6) is an example:

(6)   Gewürfelte Zwiebeln können roh oder mit heißer Brühe übergossen **an den Salat** gegeben werden.
        'Diced onions may be added to the salad raw or doused with hot broth.'

Overall, the findings for German *geben* show interesting parallels with the English dative alternation. Predictions in terms of the traditional heaviness considerations and information structure preferences are largely borne out by the *geben* data. Hence, an appropriate quantitative approach, which is able to uncover correlations between various factors, already goes beyond the stage of mere data recording. It supplies us with explanatory clues which are not readily accessible to introspection, bringing to light regularities that would otherwise for a large part remain hidden. Furthermore, given that the research results for *geben* partly match those for *give* (similar results have been obtained for other Germanic languages, e.g. Dutch, Danish and Swedish), the outcome of this part of the study points to fairly strong general tendencies across Germanic languages with regard to the alternation at hand.

4. It would however be premature to conclude that the above quantitative analysis, indispensable though it may be, provides a full explanation of the data. Not surprisingly, a number of functionally oriented approaches to the English dative alternation, which have gained widespread recognition in recent decades, have sought to determine specific semantic and/or pragmatic differences between the two variants. For instance, in Goldberg's Construction Grammar approach the alternation in English is analyzed in terms of two different argument structure constructions and three different senses. The double-object

construction is assigned the construction meaning 'successful caused posses-sion' (X CAUSES Y TO RECEIVE Z, e.g., *John gave Mary an apple*). It is contrasted with the 'transfer-caused-motion construction' (e.g., *John gave an apple to Mary*) which Goldberg calls a 'prepositional paraphrase' of the double-object construc-tion but semantically a metaphorical extension of the 'caused-motion construc-tion' (X CAUSES Y TO MOVE Z, e.g., *Joe kicked the bottle into the yard*) (Goldberg 1995, 2006). An alternative account is proposed in Rappaport Hovav & Levin (2008)'s verb-sensitive approach. They argue that with a verb such as *give* both the double-object construction and the *to*-construction convey 'successful caused possession' because of the verb's inherent meaning. By contrast, verbs such as *send* and *throw* convey 'caused possession' in the double-object construction but 'caused-motion' in the *to*-construction. Moreover, any successful transfer infer-ence is not determined by the meaning of the construction but by the meaning of the verb (e.g., by *give* and *sell* but not by *send, throw, kick* or *teach*).

It is not possible within the confines of this contribution to expound in de-tail to what extent these accounts of the English alternation can be applied to German. However, careful analysis of the data shows that this is possible only to a very limited extent. It is imperative that due attention be paid to language-specific properties of the alternation, for the following reasons. First, German possesses a fully-fledged system of morphological cases, which are found only in remnants in English. Note that the double-object construction also exists in German but it occurs with only a handful of verbs that take two objects in the ac-cusative (e.g., *lehren* 'teach') and the construction is not confined to ditransitive verbs (compare *nennen* 'call someone something'). Moreover, in German vari-ous prepositions (*in, auf, nach, zu, an*) are used to designate places in POC, often corresponding to the single preposition *to* in English. Second, while in English the dative alternation is co-extensive with R-T order and T-R order, this is dif-ferent in German. Above we pointed out the strong correlation of IOC with R-T order and POC with T-R order in sentences with *geben*, but it appears that *geben* is rather exceptional in this respect among German ditransitive verbs. (This is perhaps less surprising in view of the fact that the morphosyntactic behaviour of 'give' is notoriously special from a cross-linguistic and typological point of view, cf. Kittilä (2006)). In a random sample of 3353 sentences with 10 alternat-ing ditransitive verbs other than *geben*, IOC is attested with R-T order in 67% of the cases against 33% for T-R order (1094/533). With POC, T-R order accounts for 96%, R-T order for 4% of the occurrences (1663/63). Thus, IOC regularly occurs with both object orders, unlike POC. Thirdly, while in English not only *give*-type verbs and *send*-type verbs but also *throw*-type verbs (*throw, shoot,*

kick, slap etc.) partake in the alternation, the corresponding verbs in German (*schmeißen, werfen, schießen, treten, stoßen* etc.) occur in POC but not IOC. Only few morphologically complex throw-type verbs such as *zuwerfen* 'throw at, pass' and *hinwerfen* 'throw at' occur in IOC (cf. Croft et al. (2001)). Finally, with English *give*-type verbs the preposition *to* only takes animate complements but not inanimate complements that designate places (*give something to Berlin/the church/the bureau* etc. are acceptable only metonymically, cf. Rappaport Hovav & Levin 2008). By contrast, with German *geben*-verbs (*geben, übergeben, zurückgeben, abgeben, weitergeben* etc.) *an* can take animate or inanimate complements. It is obvious that these differences between the two languages have to be taken into account when considering functional contrasts between IOC and POC in German.

5. The results of our case study can be summarized as follows. The IOC/POC alternation in German (with whatever verb) is clearly situated at the syntax/ semantics/ pragmatics interface, with ramifications into language processing. It is therefore necessary, both with regard to the alternating constructions and the verbs that instantiate them, to distinguish 'encoded' meanings from senses that are not encoded but 'inferred', including those senses that obtain by default in normal language use (for the distinction between 'encoded' meanings and 'inferred' senses, including generalized conversational implicatures, cf. Coseriu (1975), Grice (1989), Levinson (2000), among others).

Under this view, a first conclusion is that the IOC/POC alternation in German cannot be explained in terms of a dichotomy between two independent constructions with contrasting encoded meanings. The analysis of the data shows that it is not an encoded semantic property of POC to convey 'caused motion', nor of IOC to convey '(successful) caused possession'. In this respect, the results of our study square with Rappaport Hovav & Levin (2008)'s view that the dative alternation in English does not alter the 'caused possession' reading if the verb itself, e.g. *give*, lexicalizes 'caused possession'. However, on the basis of the German data we have to go one decisive step further.

On the one hand, the encoded lexical meaning of *geben* appears underspecified with regard to the three major conventionalized senses (concrete, propositional and abstract transfer, cf. Bresnan et al. (2007)) and any specific subsenses that occur in the data (e.g., 'hand over' is a subsense of the concrete sense, on a par with 'administer', 'transmit', and so on). *Geben* does not express concrete transfer in the majority of the occurrences. Propositional and abstract transfer are equally frequent, but the concrete sense is more often attested in POC, as in (7), whereas the abstract sense is favoured in IOC, as in (8); the propositional

sense regularly occurs in both variants, (9).

(7)   Sie können die CD dann vervielfältigen und **an die Schulen** geben.
        'You can then make copies of the CD and give them to the schools.'

(8)   Hier wird **den Schülern** die Gelegenheit gegeben, mit Zeitzeugen zu disku-
        tieren.
        'Here the students are given the opportunity to discuss with eyewitnesses.'

(9)   a.   Ein Zeuge beobachtete ihn und gab **der Polizei** Tipps.
               'A witness watched him and gave tips to the police.'
        b.   Hier konnte Hebisch einen guten Tipp **an die Kameraden** geben.
               'Here Hebisch was able to give a good tip to the comrades.'

It would be begging the question to construe the uses of *geben* in the abstract (8)
and propositional (9) senses from a putative concrete 'core sense' (7). However,
'caused possession' is no encoded feature of *geben* either. A state of 'possessing
something' is not necessarily intended in ditransitive uses of *geben*, compare:

(10)   Der Kartensitz und Spielverlauf geben **dieser Hoffnung** keine Chancen.
        'The hand of cards and the course of the game give this hope no chance.'

(11)   [Ich] sehe gute Chancen, **der Wirtschaft** die dringend benötigten Im-
        pulse zu geben.
        'I see good opportunities to give much-needed impetus to the economy.'

Rather than invoking figurative extensions on apriori grounds (cf., e.g., Newman
(1996)), which have little support in the data, we argue that the underspecified
encoded meaning of *geben* is best paraphrased as a general three-place 'trans-
fer' meaning with no specification as to the features 'possession', 'path', and
'transfer modality', in contrast to other core three-place verbs such as *schicken*,
senden, liefern, schenken, and complex *geben*-verbs.

On the other hand, the corpus investigation also shows that in German, IOC
and POC are not exclusively dedicated to their functions in the ditransitive alter-
nation. 'An AGENT transferring an entity to a RECIPIENT' is but one event type both
variants can designate, which we take as evidence that this three-participant
frame is not their encoded meaning but one of their possible senses. Building
on typological research of the ditransitive construction (Kittilä 2006, Malchukov
et al. 2010, Bickel 2011, Haspelmath 2013 among others), we therefore stress the
need to analyze the alternation in terms of a more general configuration (cf. Ste-
fanowitsch 2011) on the systemic level of German grammar. This schematic con-

figuration combines three semantic roles, viz. an AGENT, a THEME, and a GOAL, to a three-argument pattern. IOC and POC have the status of 'allostructions' (cf. Cappelle (2006)) that instantiate this configuration rather than being independent constructions in the grammar (unlike the English double-object construction, which has an encoded ditransitive meaning, if previous analyses are correct); nor can one allostruction be considered more 'basic' than the other. The two allostructions are moreover partly in complementary distribution in German: *give*-type verbs and *send*-type verbs occur both in IOC and POC but *throw*-type verbs occur in POC (with the exception of a small number of morphologically complex verbs such as *zuwerfen, hinwerfen* etc.). Furthermore, whereas the GOAL is a spatial goal (DESTINATION) with *throw*-type verbs, it is either a spatial goal or a possessional goal (RECIPIENT) with *give*-type verbs and *send*-type verbs.

Importantly, the occurrences of IOC and POC are no realizations on a one-off basis. Their uses reflect the pervasive role of a handful of conventionalized senses, which in turn correlate with various morphosyntactic, semantic and pragmatic factors as well heaviness constraints. These correlations concur to establish observable, albeit non-exclusive, tendencies in language use which, although no rules of grammar, are indispensible to understand why on a particular occasion of language use one variant is likely to be chosen whereas the other one is more or less strongly dispreferred. For instance, the tendency for IOC to occur with the abstract transfer sense of *geben* in combination with an abstract THEME and an animate RECIPIENT contrasts with the no less notable tendency for POC to occur with the concrete or propositional transfer sense of the verb in combination with a RECIPIENT that either designates a collective entity or allows for both a concrete locative or an abstract institutional reading (e.g., *Ministerium* 'government department, ministry'.).

6. In conclusion, the level of normal language use, situated in between the language system and actual instantiations of language use, is key to a layered account of the alternation (cf. Coene & Willems 2006). This level straddles the stringent dichotomous competence-performance distinction and accounts for observable tendencies in the data which can neither be fully explained in terms of lexico-grammatical rules nor be reduced to mere performance phenomena. It is only by charting their always dynamic but partly conventionalized features in a representative set of naturally occurring sentences that the complex functional interplay of IOC, POC and verbs such as *geben* can be explained in a comprehensive way.

References

Bickel, B. 2011. Grammatical relations typology. In J.J. Song (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of linguistic typology*. 399–444. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Bresnan, J. 2007. Is syntactic knowledge probabilistic? Experiments with the English dative alternation. In S. Featherston & W. Sternefeld (eds.), *Roots: Linguistics in search of its evidential base*. 75–96. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Bresnan, J., Cueni, A., Nikitina, T. & Baayen, H. 2007. Predicting the dative alternation. In G. Bouma, I. Krämer & J. Zwarts (eds.), *Cognitive foundations of interpretation*. 69–94. Chicago, IL: The University of Chicago Press.

Bresnan, J. & Ford, M. 2010. Predicting syntax: Processing dative constructions in American and Australian varieties of English. *Language* 86. 186–213.

Cappelle, B. 2006. Particle placement and the case for 'allostructions'. *Constructions online* SV1-7. 1–28. `https://journals.linguisticsociety.org/elanguage/constructions/issue/view/17.html`.

Coene, A. & Willems, K. 2006. Konstruktionelle Bedeutungen. Kritische Anmerkungen zu Adele Goldbergs konstruktionsgrammatischer Bedeutungstheorie. *Sprachtheorie und germanistische Linguistik* 16. 1–35.

Coseriu, E. 1975. System, Norm und Rede. In E. Coseriu (ed.), *Sprachtheorie und allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft. 5 Studien*. 11–101. Munich: Fink.

Croft, W., Barðdal, J., Hollmann, W., Nielsen, M., Sotirova, V. & Taoka, C. 2001. Discriminating verb meanings: The case of transfer verbs. Handout, LAGB Autumn Meeting, Reading.

De Vaere, H., De Cuypere, L. & Willems, K. 2018. Alternating constructions with ditransitive *geben* in present-day German. *Corpus Linguistics and Linguistic Theory* `https://doi.org/10.1515/cllt-2017-0072`.

Goldberg, A. 1995. *Constructions: A Construction Grammar approach to argument structure*. Chicago, IL: The University of Chicago Press.

Goldberg, A. 2006. *Constructions at work: The nature of generalization in language*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.

Grice, P. 1989. Logic and conversation. In P. Grice (ed.), *Studies in the way of words*. 22–40. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.

Haspelmath, M. 2013. Ditransitive constructions: the verb 'give'. In M.S. Dryer & M. Haspelmath (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. `http://wals.info/chapter/105`.

Haspelmath, M. & Baumann, L. 2013. German valency patterns. In I. Hartman, M. Haspelmath & B. Taylor (eds.), *Valency patterns leipzig*. Leipzig: Max Planck

Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. `http://valpal.info/languages/german`.

Hawkins, J.A. 1994. *A performance theory of order and constituency*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

Kittilä, S. 2006. The anomaly of the verb 'give' explained by its high (formal and semantic) transitivity. *Linguistics* 44. 569–612.

Levinson, S. 2000. *Presumptive meanings: The theory of Generalized Conversational Implicature*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

Malchukov, A.L., Haspelmath, M. & Comrie, B. 2010. Ditransitive constructions: A typological overview. In A.L. Malchukov, M. Haspelmath & B. Comrie (eds.), *Studies in ditransitive constructions: A comparative handbook*. 1–64. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Matzel, K. 1976. Dativ und Präpositionalphrase. *Sprachwissenschaft* 1. 144–186.

Newman, J. 1996. *Give: A cognitive linguistic study*. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Proost, K. 2015. Verbbedeutung, Konstruktionsbedeutung oder beides? Zur Bedeutung deutscher Ditransitivstrukturen und ihrer präpositionalen Varianten. In S. Engelberg, M. Meliss, K. Proost & E. Winkler (eds.), *Argumentstruktur zwischen Valenz und Konstruktion*. 157–176. Tübingen: Narr.

Rappaport Hovav, M. & Levin, B. 2008. The English dative alternation: The case for verb sensitivity. *Journal of Linguistics* 44(1). 129–167.

Stefanowitsch, A. 2011. Argument structure: item-based or distributed? *Zeitschrift für Anglistik und Amerikanistik* 59. 369–386.

Thompson, S. 1995. The iconicity of 'dative shift' in English: Considerations from information flow in discourse. In M.E. Landsberg (ed.), *Syntactic iconicity and linguistic freezes. The human dimension*. 155–175. Berlin: Mouton de Gruyter.

Wegener, H. 1985. *Der Dativ im heutigen Deutsch*. Tübingen: Narr.